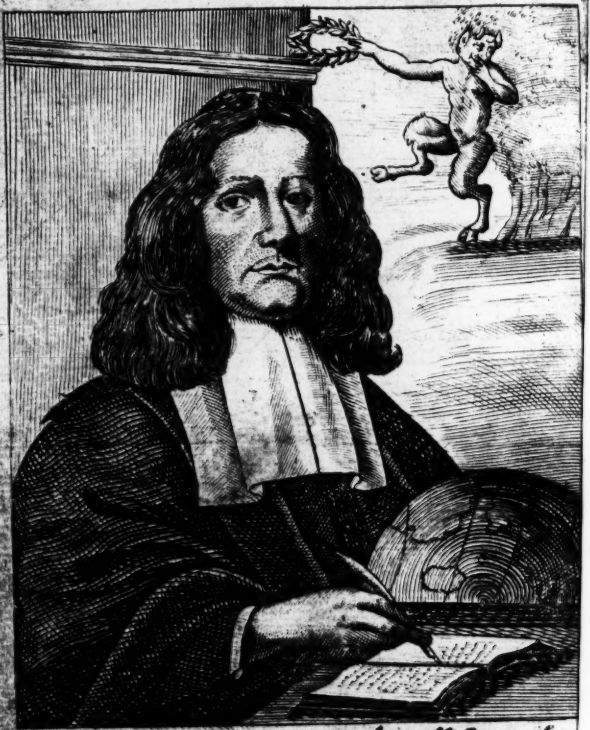
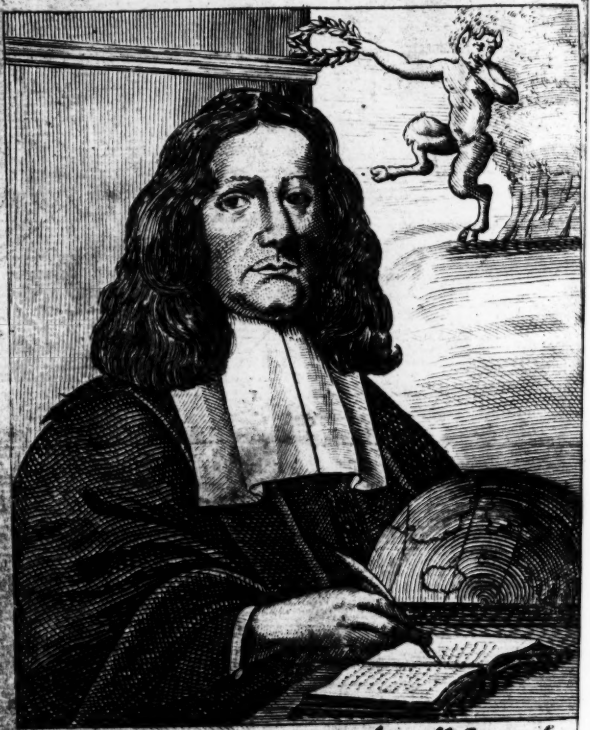


The Globe's thy Study e; for thy boundles's mind
In a les's limit cannot be confind.
Gazing, I here admire: thy very lookes
Show thou art read as well in men, as bookes.
He that shall scan thy face, may judge by it,
Thou hast an Head peece that is throngd with wit

I. F



The Globe's thy Study e; for thy boundles's mind
In a les's limit cannot be confind.
Gazing, I here admire: thy very lookes
Show thou art read as well in men, as bookes.
He that shall scan thy face, may judge by it,
Thou hast an Head peece that is throngd with wit

I. F

THE English Rogue DESCRIBED, In the LIFE OF MERITON LATROON, A Witty Extravagant.

COMPREHENDING THE Moſt Eminent CHEATS OF BOTH SEXES.

Read, *but don't* Practice: *for the Author ſinds*
They which live Honeſt *have moſt quiet minds*

Dixero ſi quid fortè jocoſius mihi juris
Cum veniâ dabis.——

London: Printed for *Francis Kirkman*, at the Prince Arms in Chancery-lane, 1666.

BODLEIAN
1961

THE PREFACE.

Beloved Country-men,

HAd I not more reſpect to my Countries good in general, then any private intereſt of mine own, I ſhould not have introduced my *Friend* upon the common Theatre of the World, to act the part of a *Rogue* in the publick view of all. *Rogue!* did I call him? I ſhould recal that word, ſince his Actions were attended more with Witty Conceits, then Life-

de-

deſtroying Stratagems. It is confeſt, the whole bent of his minde tended to little elſe then *Exorbitancy*; and *Neceſſity* frequently compelled him to perpetrate *Villany*: And no wonder, ſince he lived in the infectious Air of the worſt of moſt *Licentious Times*. But ſtill *I* blame my ſelf for ſtigmatizing him with ſuch an *Opprobrious Title*, ſince in the declination of his days, the conſideration of his former *Wicked Courſes* hath wrought (*I* have ſo much charity for him to believe it) in him cordial contrition, and unfeigned repentance; and the truth of it is, Man ſhould be regarded not for what he *was*, but what he *is*.

Since his *Reformation*, *I* have taken very great delight in his Converſation, and never went from him, but with great ſatisfaction in the *Ingenious Relation* of the tranſactions of his youthful days: And frequently revolving them

in my mind, Reaſon ſuggeſted to me the *Hiſtory of his Life* could not but be as profitable as pleaſant, if made *publick*. For herein you may ſee Vice pourtrayed in her own proper ſhape, the uglineſs whereof (her *Vizard-Mask* being remov'd) cannot but cauſe in her (*quondam*) Adorers, a *loathing*, in ſtead of *loving*. Wherefore, with my *Friends* free conſent, and being inſtigated thereunto by many *perſons* inferiour to few, either for *Birth*, *Education*, or *Natural Parts*, I attempted this *Eſſay*.

If any be ſo curious to know what the (*Actors* you have in the Title) *Authors* Name is, let me crave his pardon for his concealment, and anſwer him with *Plutarch* to an inquiſitive Fellow, *Quum vides velatam, quid inquiris in rem abſconditam?* It was therefore covered, becauſe he ſhould not know what was in it. It is

dough that the *Actor* hath ſhewn himſelf willing to declare *freely*, and without *mincing* the *truth* of what he hath done, without *knowing* who writ it: if the *Contents* ſhall as well *pleaſe* as *admoniſh*, no matter what I'm call'd. But if you are ſo deſirous to know what the *Writer* is, I ſhall briefly inform your *curioſity*: But I doubt I have *undertaken* what I *cannot perform*; for if to know a mans ſelf be more than an *Herculean Labour*, then without doubt it is beyond the limits of my power to tell you what I am; neither can *any man* truly *know another*, unleſs he firſt *knows* himſelf.

For ſome few years the World and I have had a great *falling out*; and though *I* have uſed all *probable* & *poſſible* means, we remain yet *unreconcil'd*.

My onely comfort is, I have a ſmall treaſure in *Minerva's Tower*, by which I ſubſiſt; and by the benefit thereof, can

can walk abroad, not without taking *Obſervation* both from what I *hear* and *ſee*; and returning home, *Tam Aulæ vanitatem, quam Fori ambitionem ridere mecum Soleo.* I can with *Democritus*, laugh at the *Actions* of men, extracting *Wiſdome* from their *Follies*, and afterwards *laſh* them with a *Rod* of *Experience* made of their own *fond inconſiderateneſs.*

As for my part, I am onely a *Wiſeacre*, (a Retort once put upon *Ben Johnſon*) for I have no *Acres of Land.* But therefore don't be ſo unadviſed, (as too many are of late) to regard not ſo much the *worth* of the Work, as the *dignity* of the Perſon. *Qui ſimiliter in legendos libros atq; in ſalutandos homines irruunt, non cogitantes quales, ſed quibus veſtibus induti ſint.* They mind not ſo much *what*, as *who* writ it; not the Quality of the *Thing*, but the Quality of the *Author*; and a *Perſon of*

ſ. *Honour* (now adays) being ſet in the place of the *Writer*, makes the Book received with a general applauſe. Pardon as well my Satyrical as Cynical Humour. If any diſlike what I have writ, let them let it *alone*, or publiſh themſelves ſomething of a better *Compoſition*. I ſhall not value any ones Cenſure, for I have already *Antidoted* my ſelf againſt it, by my own *diſ-eſteem* I have hereof. I am ſo far from being *Opinionative*, that you cannot ſpeak worſe then what I judge of it.

Naſutus ſit uſq; licet, ſis deniq; Naſus,
Non potes in nugas dicere plura meas.

Bark, foul-mouth'd carping *Momus*, if thou durſt:
What I have writ is bad; now do thy worſt.

Thus

Thus you ſee, as I will not *arrogate*, ſo I ſhall not *derogate*: for as I am ſo many *Paraſanges* after ſuch a one, yet I may be an *Ace* above thee, if thou art too *Cenſorious*.

But ſome may ſay, That this is but *actum agere*, a Collection out of *Guzman*, *Boſcon*, or ſome others that have writ upon this ſubject, *Cramben bis coctam apponere*; and that I have onely *ſqueez'd* their *Juice*, (adding ſome Ingredient of my own) and afterwards *diſtill'd* it in the *Lymbeck* of my own *Head*. *Non habes confitentem reum*, I never *extracted* from them one *ſingle drop of Spirit*. As if we could not produce an *Engliſh Rogue* of our *own*, without being beholding to other *Nations* for him. I will not ſay that he durſt vye with either an *Italian*, *Spaniſh*, or *French Rogue*; but having been *ſteept* for ſome years in an *Iriſh Bogg*, that hath added ſo much to his *Rogue-*

ſhips perfection, that he out-did them all by out-doing one, and that was a *Scot*; I need not uſe the Epithite *Roguiſh*, ſince the very name proves it a *Tautologie*. If I have borrowed any thing, it was not from what paſt the *Preſs*, but what I have taken upon the *ſcore* in Diſcourſe, *&c.* I here repay with Uſury, but not in the ſame *Commodity*. *Etiamſi apparet unde ſumptum ſit, aliud tamen quam unde ſumptum ſit, apparet*. I have not done as the *Romans*, who robb'd the whole Univerſe to enrich their ill-ſited City; *Rome*, I mean. I ſkimm'd not off the Cream of other mens Wits, nor Cropt the flowers in others gardens to garniſh my own *Plots*; neither have I Larded my Lean Fancy with the Fat of others *Ingenious Labours*; but from the diſtation of my own *Genius*, I have expreſt *quicquid in buccam venerit*, what came next, without much premeditati-

on

on or ſtudy. Gra-mercy *Sack*, if happily I have hit the mark.

I am no *Aquæ potor*, an implacable *Enemy* to *Small Beer*; all the *Purchaſes* I can boaſt of, lies in *Wine*, which is by *Moderns* highly eſteemed for improving good Wits, *infuſing* Elogies and *Hyperbolical Exornations*, forming ſuch hard words in the *Brain*, as ſhall, like *Aceſta's Arrows*, catch fire as they flew. But I have *wandred* from that *common rode*, reſpecting more the *matter* then *words*. For my Stile is *plain* and *familiar*, rejecting bombaſt *Expreſſions*, thinking them moſt *happy* when moſt eaſily to be underſtood.

As for the *Matter* it ſelf, if it be faulty, or the *Method* rude and indigeſted, conſider, *Quod nihil perfectum vel ſingulare conſummatum induſtria*, No man can obſerve all things; neither is it to be imagined that all *Rogueries* can be perform'd by one man. Not but that when

when you have read him, you will find him *Notorious* enough.

Some men are not content to *commit Villany* themſelves, and boaſt of it too, but they will rob others of that which they ſhould be *aſham'd* to own. In this there is little or no *Fiction*, I'll aſſure you; and there is no *Story* therein which doth not carry with it more then the bare *probability* of *truth*. Should I ſpeak much more, it is to be fear'd ſome will argue from hence, that I am conſcious to my ſelf of its various defects; and therefore I ſhall deſiſt from Apologizing for *it*, or my ſelf.

Senſible I am, that if ought be omitted or added, which the Reader likes or diſlikes, he will account me *Mancipium paucæ lectionis*, an Idiot, an inſipid Aſs: *nullus ſum, vel Plagiarius*; a very Thief, and that I ſtole other mens Labours. Thus do I know I ſhall be vilified and undervalued even by ſuch, that

that are ſo far from being capable of judging of *Ingennity*, that they know not how to write Orthographically ſix words of ſenſe in their own Mother-tongue. Yet I muſt confeſs, what is writ is neither as I would, nor as it ſhould, it being uſher'd into the world as it was firſt written; whereas I ſhould have done with this, as a *Phyſitian* adviſed ſhould be done with *Lapis Lazuli*, to be waſht fifty times before uſed. Had not immergent affairs hindred me, I would have lick'd this *Cub* into a more *comely Form*. But ſince 'tis otherwiſe, I ſhall onely complain with *Ovid*;

Cum relego ſcripſiſſe pudet, quia plurima cerno
Me quoq; quæ fuerant Judice digna lini.

All the favour that *I* ſhall deſire, is, That the *Reader* would not account the

Printers literal or verbal Eſcapes *mine*; and withal paſs a candid interpretation on each Line; and I ſhall endeavour in a ſhort time to become more ſatisfactory, and ſtudy how I may be always ſerviceable to my Country.

When I read o're what I have writ, then ſhame
O'reſpreads my face, becauſe it ſtabs my Name.

Meriton Latroon.

On

ON

The Engliſh Rogue.

WHat others writ, was ta'n upon the Score;
Thou art in Re, *what they but feign'd before.*
They did but liſp, *or worſe, ſpeak through the* Noſe:
Thou haſt pronounc't, and liv'ſt in Verſe *and* Proſe.
Guzman, Lazaro, Boſcon, *and* Francion,
Till thou appear'ſt, did ſhine as at high Noon.
Thy Book's now extant; thoſe that judge of Wit,
Say, They and Rablais *too fall ſhort of it.*
How could't be otherwiſe, ſince 'twas thy fate,
To practiſe *what they did but* imitate.
We ſtand amaz'd at thy Epheſian Fire;
Such purchas'd Infamy *all muſt admire.*

N. D.

On

On the Enſuing Subject.

What! more Rogues *ſtill? I thought*
our happy Times
Were freed from ſuch, as from Rebellious
Crimes.
But ſuch will be: i'th' beſt of Times *we find*
The worſt of men; *the* Law *can't* lawleſs
bind.
It muſt be ſo, ſince Nature thought it fit
To give ſome nought but Lands, *to others*
Wit,
But no Eſtates, *beſtowing ſuch a mind*
That can't within due limits *be confin'd.*
Hence Depredations, Theſts, *nay worſer*
facts,
Cheating *and* Whoring, *with unheard of*
acts:
For Swimming *for their* Lives, *theſe* Miſ-
rules *think,*
'Tis better catch *at any thing, then* ſink.
Such was this Rogue, *eſteem'd the worſt of*
men;
Liv'd by his Sword, *his* Pregnant Wit *and*
Pen.
In ſhort, Pray pardon if I ſpeak amiſs;
I never read ſo arch a Rogue *as* This.

A. B.

To the

READER,

In ſtead of the *ERRATA.*

THis *Rogue* hath had his Faults; the *Printers* too:
All *Men* whilſt here, do *erre*; and ſo do *You.*

H. Marſh.

The

The English Padder or Hiway Robber Portrayd

THE ENGLISH ROGUE

Described in the Life of a *Witty Extravagant:*

CHAP. I.

What his Parents were. The place of his own Nativity. His miraculous Escape from the hands of Irish Rebels. His brother being at that very time murdered by the merciless hands of those bloody Butchers.

AFter a long and strict Inquisition after my Fathers Pedegree, I could not finde any of his Ancestors bearing a *Coat*: surely length of time had *worn* it out. But if the *Gentle Craft* will any wayes ennoble his Family, I believe I could deduce several of his Name, Professors of that *Lasting Art*, even from *Crispin*. My Fa-

thers Father had by his continual labor in Husbandry, arriv'd to the height of a Farmer, then the head of his Kinred: ſtanding upon one of his own Mole-Hills, Ambition ſo ſwell'd him, that he ſwore by his Plow-ſhare, that his eldeſt Son (my Father) ſhould be a *Scholiard*; and ſhould learn ſo long, till he could read any printed or written hand; nay, and if occaſion ſhould ſerve, write a Bill or Bond.

It was never known that any of the Family could diſtinguiſh one letter from another, neither could they ſpeak above the reach of their Horſes underſtandings. Talk to them in any other Dialect but that of a *Bag-pudding of a Peck*, or *a piece of Beef*, (in which their teeth might ſtep whet-ſhod) and a man were as good to have diſcourſed with them in *Arabick*. But let me not abuſe them; for ſome underſtood ſomething elſe; that is to ſay, The Art of Whiſtling, Driving their Team, and to ſhooe themſelves as well as their Horſes; how to lean methodically upon a Sraff, and through the holes of their Hat, tell what it is a Clock by the Sun.

The ſymmetrical proportion, ſweetneſs of features, and acuteneſs of my Fathers wit, were ſuch (though extracted out of this lump of *red* and *white marle*) that he was belov'd of all. As the lovelineſs of his perſon gain'd always an intereſt in Female hearts; ſo the quickneſs of apprehenſion and invention, and the acquired quaintneſs of his expreſſions, procured him the friendſhip of ſuch as converſed with him. A Gentleman at length taking notice of more than ordinary natural parts in him, at his proper charge ſent him to the Univerſity, where in a ſhort time he became famous for *Univerſal Learning*, and in proceſs of time, notorious for all ſorts of Debauchery.

The

The Gallants and Critical Wits of *Oxford*, coveted so much his Company, that he had not time to apply himself to his study; but giving way to their sollicitations, being prompted thereunto by his own powerful inclinations, plunged himself over head and ears in all manner of sensuality. For his lewd carriage, inimitably wicked practises, and detestable behaviour, he was at last expelled the Colledge.

Now was he forc'd to return to his Father, who with much joy received him, but would not tell him the true cause of his coming down: But to palliate his villanies, inform'd his Father that he had learned as much as he could be instructed in; and now and then would sprinkle his Discourse with a *Greek* or *Latine* Sentence, when talking with the poor ignorant old Man; who took wonderful delight in the meer sound thereof. When my Father talkt at any time, they were all as silent as midnight; and then would my Grandfather with much admiration becken to the standers by, to give their greatest attention, to what the *Speaker* as little understood as his *Auditors*. In ostentation he was carried to the Parson of the Parish to discourse with him; who by good fortune understood no other Tongues but what his Mother taught him; My Father perceiving that, made *Shoulderamutton* and *Katathumpton* serve for very good *Greek*; which the Parson confirmed: telling my Grand-father further, that his Son was an excellent Scholar; protesting that he was so deeply learned, that he spake things he understood not.

He had not been long in the Countrey, before a Gentlewoman taking notice of his external and internal Qualifications, fell deeply in love with him;

and preferring her own pleaſure before the diſpleaſure of her wealthy Relations, ſhe *incontinently* was married to him. Her Portion (though large) was ſoon expended, and then neceſſity called upon my Father to look out for ſome employment, conduceable to a future livelyhood. After the fruſtration of various attempts, in fine concluded to undertake the Miniſterial Function: but the main obſtacle was, his fear he ſhould not practiſe what he preached; but having ſatiated himſelf with all manner of ſenſualities, he began to loath what formerly he loved, his hatred thereunto being aggravated by the evil effects he experimented in ſuch licentious courſes.

His eminent Parts natural, (and what he attain'd unto by his Country ſtudies, being aſham'd to have loſt ſo much time) introduc'd him as a Chaplain to a Noble-man, with whom he travel'd into *Ireland*. Experience had then ſo reformed his life to ſo ſtrict a religious courſe, that his obſervers gained more by his Example, than his Hearers by Precepts. Thus by his piety in the purity of his practice, he ſoon regained his loſt credit.

By this time my Mother grew near her time, having conceiv'd me in *England*, but not *conceiving* ſhe ſhould thus *drop* me in an *Iriſh Bog*. It is ſtrange the Clymate ſhould have more prevalency over the nature of the Native, than the diſpoſition of the Parent. For though Father and Mother could neither flatter, deceive, revenge, equivocate, *&c.* yet the Son (as the conſequence hath ſince made it appear) can (according to the common cuſtom of his Countrey-men) diſſemble and ſooth up his adverſary with expreſſions extracted from Celeſtial Manna, taking his advantage thereby to ruine him:

For

For to ſpeak the truth, I could never yet love any but for ſome by-reſpect, neither could I ever be perſwaded into a pacification with that man who had any way injured me, never reſting ſatisfied till I had accompliſhed a plenary revenge, which I commonly effected under the pretence of great love and kindneſs. Cheat all I dealt withal, though the matter were ever ſo inconſiderable. Lye ſo naturally, that a miracle may be as ſoon wrought, as a Truth proceed from my mouth. And then for Equivocation, or mental Reſervations, they were ever in me innate Properties. It was always my diſpoſition rather to die by the hand of a common Executioner, than want my revenge, though ever ſo ſlightly grounded. This is the nature of an Iriſhman; bBut I ſhall deſiſt here to characterize him further, reſerving him for another place.

Four years after my Birth, the Rebellion began ſo unexpectedly, that we were forced to flee in the night; the light of our flaming Houſes, Ricks of Hay, and Stacks of Corn, guided us out of the Town, and our Fears ſoon conveyed us to the Mountains. The Rebels, wandring to and fro, intending either to meet with their friends, (who flockt from all parts to get into a Body) or elſe any Engliſh, which they deſigned as ſacrifices to their implacable malice, or inbred antipathy to that Nation, met with my Mother, attended by two Scullogues, her menial ſervants, the one carrying me, the other my brother. The Fates had decreed my brothers untimely death, and therefore unavoidable, the *faithful Infidel* being butchered with him. The ſurviving ſervant who carried me, declared that he was a Roman Catholick, and imploring their mercy with his howling *Chram achrees*, and

St. *Patrick, a gra*, procured my Mothers, his own, and my ſafety..

Thus was I preſerv'd, but I hope not reſerv'd as a ſubject for Divine Vengeance to work on. Had I then died, no other guilt could have rendred me culpable before Gods Tribunal, but what was derivative before *Adam*. But ſince, the concatenation of ſins various links hath encompaſſed the whole ſeries of my life. Now to the intent I may deter others from perpetrating the like, and receive to my ſelf Abſolution (according as it is promiſed) upon unfeigned Repentance, and ingenious Confeſſion of my nefarious Facts, I ſhall give the Reader a Summary Relation of my Life; from my Non-age to the Meridian of my dayes, hoping that my Extravagancies and youthful Exiliences, have in that ſtate of life, their declination and period.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

What Waggeries he committed, being but a Childe.

BEing about five years of age, Report rendred me a very beautiful Childe, being enricht with all the good properties of a handſom face, had not pride in that my tender age depriv'd me of its grace or chiefeſt ornament. Thus it hapned, My Father kept commonly many Turkeys; one among the reſt could not endure the ſight of a Red Coat, which I uſually wore: But that which moſt of all exaſperated my budding paſſion, was his aſſaulting my bread and butter, and in ſtead thereof, ſometimes my hands; which cauſed my bloomy Revenge to uſe this Stratagem. I enticed him with what I had in my hand to the Orchard-gate, which was made to ſhut with a pulley; he reaching in his head after me, I immediately clapt faſt the Gate, and ſo ſurprized my *mortal Foe*. Then did I uſe that little ſtrength I had to beat his brains out with my Cat-ſtick; which being done, I deplum'd his tayl, ſticking thoſe feathers in my Bonnet, as the inſulting Trophies of my firſt and lateſt conqueſt. Such then was my pride, as I nothing but gazed up at them; which ſo tryed the weakneſs of my eyes, and ſo ſtrained the Optick Nerves, that my eyes ran a tilt at one another, as if they contended to ſhare with me in my victory. This accident was no ſmall trouble to my Mother, that ſo doted on me, that I

have often heard her say, *She forgot to eat (when I sate at Table) for admiring the sweetness of my complexion.*

This proved no lasting damage to my beauteous countenance: for though for the present it eclipsed the glory of my face, yet time reduced my eyes to their proper station; so that within six years the obliquity of my eyes aspects were hardly discernable. Nay, I have heard some say, that this cast of my eyes was so far from being a detriment, that it became my ornament. Experience confirm'd me in this belief: for they proved as powerful, as the perswasive arguments of my deluding tongue; both which conjovned, were sufficient (I speak it not vain-gloriously) to prevail even over the *Goddess of Chastity*; especially bring backt on with ardent desires, and an undaunted resolution. But to my purpose: Being driven out of *Ireland*, there being at that time no place of safety in that Kingdom, my Mother taking me with her, (being compelled to leave my Father behind, barbarously murdered by the Rebels for being a Protestant Preacher) she adventured to Sea, not caring whither she went. Foulness of weather drove us upon the Coast of *France*, where we were forced to land, to repair what damage the Ship had sustained in stress of weather. From *France* we set sayl, and landed in the West of *England*. Here we were joyfully received, and well entertained by some of my Mothers kindred at first: but lying upon them, they at length grew weary; so that we were forced to go from thence to some other place: where-ever we came, we found still some or other that gave us entertainment for those good parts they found in my Mother, she being very well read both in Divinity and History, and having

ying an eloquent tongue, she commonly apply'd her self to the Minister of the Town; who wondring to see so much learning and perfection in a Woman, either took us into his own house for a while, or gathered some contributions to supply our present necessities; with which we travalled to the next Town: and in this manner we strouled or wandred up and down, being little better then mendicant Itinerants. Staying so little time in a place, and my Mother being more careful to get a subsistence, than to season my tender years with the knowledge of Letters, I was ten years old before I could read. Being asham'd to go to School in this ignorance, I apply'd my self to my Mother, who taught me to apprehend the Alphabet in less hours then there are letters: so that in a short time, I could read distinctly, and immediately introduc'd into the Grammar-School; where I had not been long, before I became a Book-worm, securing as many as lay in my way, if convenient privacy serv'd. And to the intent that my Thefts might pass undiscovered, before I would vend what Books I had stollen, I usually metamorphized them: if new, I would gash their skin; and if the leaves were red, I would make them look pale for the wounds they received: if much used, tear out all the remarks, and paint their old faces. This course I followed a long time undiscovered, which cost many a Boy a Whipping at home by their Parents, as well as Master. I had various uses for my money, (you must think) but principally to bribe some of the upper Form to make my Exercises: which were so well liked of by my Master, that I still came off with applause; and in a short time so advanced, that I was next to the highest Form, when I understood not the lowest Author we read. I was

forced

forced to employ my Wits in the management of my hands, to keep touch with my Penſioners, leſt they failing me for want of encouragement, my Maſter ſhould diſcover how much my Dunceſhip was abuſed. Frequent were my Truantings, which were always attended with ſome notorious Fact, beſides ſmall Faults, as robbing of Orchards, pulling the firſt and ſeconds of forty or fifty Geeſe at a time, milking the Cows in my Hat, and ſo drink the milk: And then for Poultrey, there was ſeldom a day eſcaped, wherein I had not more or leſs; which I carried to a houſe that encourag'd me in my Roguery, participating of the cheer, and ſo feaſting me for my pains. If I had ſtoln any thing, I had my recourſe to them, who would give me two pence for what was worth a ſhilling, and render me good content. I knew my puniſhment for my rambling, and valued it not; therefore little hope of reformation from thence. Nay, for very ſmall faults I wiſht to be whipt, knowing the Rod would then be laid on gently; which carried it with a tickling pleaſure, ſtimulating Lechery. As for my Thefts and Rogueries abroad, I was careful they ſhould not be diſcovered. If any Boy had injured me, whoſe ſtrength exceeded mine, ſo that I durſt not cope with him, I would exerciſe my revenge upon him privately, concealing the reſentment of the injury he did me. One common trick I had, was to ſtick a Pin on the board whereon he was to ſit: in this manner did I ſerve ſeveral, in which fact I was at laſt taken; the puniſhment my Maſter inflicted on me, was, To ſit by his Desk alone, and compoſe a Copy of Verſes: by which means he perceived how much I had abuſed my ſelf in the loſs of my time; for I knew not how many feet any Verſe required, and therefore

muſt

must needs be altogether ignorant of their composition. Whereupon he degraded me, and made me begin a new. The shame whereof, and reproach I daily received from my School-fellows, I could not bear; wherefore I prevailed on my Mothers indulgency, to let me regain what I had lost at home, which she consented to. But perceiving my Lecherous inclinations, by my night-practises with her Maid, resolved to send me to a Boarding-School; For our Family being but small, I lay with the maid: being so young, my Mother did not in the least suspect me; but my too forward Lechery would not lye quiet, putting her frequently to the squeek; in fine, I was sent away a great distance to a very severe and rigid Master. Now was I kept close to my Book; and lest my Wit should be any ways dulled, my stomach was always kept sharp; which quickned my invention, to supply what was deficient. There is no complaint so insufferable, as the grumbling of empty and dissatisfied Guts. My greatest care was to insinuate my self into the favor of the Servant-maids, knowing they loved to play at a *Small Game* rather than stick out, rather than not have their *itching Gums rubb'd* at all, they would admit of a *Childes Corral* to execute the Office. I performed my business so well, that my stomach was always satiated when the rest of the boarders were dissatisfied; often going to bed in a manner supperless. Here I was deprived of my old pilfering way, because I had no convenience for the disposal of what I stole, it being but a very small Village. My mother moreover, fearing the extravagantness of my nature, allowed me nothing for expence, which made me desperately resolved. A River confined within some made Bank, deterring its natural course, will (when

that

that is overthrown, which impeded its progress) flow with the greater impetuosity: Youth may for a while be circumscribed as to its desires; but if his inclination prompt him to the enjoyment of sensual delight, sooner or latter he will taste their relish, and better early than late. Before the Noon of his days approach, Experience may reform his Life and Conversation: Though from the Dawning morning thereof, till the Meridian, his actions have been nothing else but the extract of all maner of Debauchery. But (it is commonly observed) that man which in the declination of his age, tracks the by-paths of Vice and Licentiousness, seldom desists till Death cuts off his passage; never leaving off doting on such false and imaginary pleasures, till the *Grim Pale-faced Messenger* takes him napping. Thus much by way of Digression.

Our Master was very ancient, however resolved that his Age should not hinder his Teaching: For if he found himself indisposed, he would send for us all into his bed-chamber, instructing us there. One time above the rest, a Gentleman had sent his Son five pieces of Gold to give his Master for Dyer, *&c.* Our Master receiving them, called for a small Cabinet that stood in the room, which I (more officious than the rest) brought him. Having put in the Gold, he commanded me to carry it from whence I had it: Which I did; well considering the weight thereof, being, though small, very heavy. The Devil presently became my Tutor, suggesting to my thoughts, various ways for the gaining this money. At last I resolved to take the impression of the Key in Wax; which with much difficulty I obtained, and carried it to a Smith four miles distant. The old

Fellow

Fellow (immediately upon my proposal) suspected me; (questionless he was acquainted with such kind of devices) and questioning me what I intended thereby, I was forced to betake my self to my Legs for safety, not knowing what answer to make him. My first stratagem not suiting with my purpose, I tryed a Picklock of mine own invention; but that would not effect my design neither: So that I concluded to take Cabinet and all. My masters custom was to walk abroad at nights, and sleep in the daytime; inverting the course of Nature: Foreknowing his intention, I got into the Chamber, and concealed my self under the bed. Finding my way clear, I conveyed my self and purchase out of the House, and travelled all night. In the morning I found my self near a small Town, about sixteen miles distant from the place whence I came. Thinking my self now secure, I thought it very requisite here to repose my wearied Limbs, and solace my self with the sight of what I had gotten; but it was not long after that I was so laced for it, that comparatively to my punnishment, *Bridwel* whiphing is but a pastime. I called for Sack, having never tasted any, and hearing much talk thereof; at which the people of the House much admired, that so small an Urchin as I should call for such costly Liquor. They viewed me very inevitably, but more especially the Cabinet which caused them to suspect me. At length they began to ask me divers Questions, *Whence I came? Whither I was going? What was contained within that Cascanet?* and the like. Before I could give the resolution of what they demanded, the *Hue and Cry* overtook me: Presently I was laid hold on, and my treasure taken from me: That which vext me as much as my Surprizal, was

I had

I had not time to try what kinde of taste the Sack had. Various were the talk of the people, every one spending his verdict on me. *This is a prime young Rogue indeed to begin thus soon*, said one, *could he have seen, when in his Mothers belly, surely he would have stoln something thence.* Another said, *Forward fruit was soon rotten; and since I began to steal whilest a childe, I should be hanged before I should write Man.* Ready to die with fear, I was sent back to the place whence I came, and from thence to the place of Execution, had not the tenderness of my age, and fewness of years, procured pity from my injured Master. Confined I was within his house, lockt up close prisoner in a Chamber, till that he could acquaint my mother with what had past: in this time I was not debarred of my sustenance, though my Commons were epitomized, but I was daily visited by my Master, attended with a *Cat of Nine-tails* (as he called it) being so many small cords, with which he fleyed my buttocks; & when he found me stubborn, or not penitent enough as he thought, after he had skinn'd my podix, he would wash it with vinegar, or water and salt. Within a week my mother arrived, who hearing of my Rogueries, was so impatient, that she would needs take me to task her self; but when she had untrust me, and saw me in so woful a plight, my shirt being as stiff as Buckram with blood and my tender breech ploughed and harrowed, fell down as if she had been about to expire; recovering, my Master endeavored to satisfie her, by telling her, that great offences required great punishments; and the way to bend an Oak, is to do it whilest it is young; alleadging many more arguments to that purpose, which had satisfied her well in his severity, had not natural affection interposed.

What

What to do with me, she knew not; wherefore she consulted with my Master, who told her, *He durst not keep me longer, the country people bringing in daily complaints against me.* And to aggravate my Mother the more, he briefly summ'd up my faults in this manner; having had justly various accusers, who drew up my Indictment.

Imprimis, That one of his Maids having croft me (to be reveng'd of her, knowing she was a drowsie wench, when asleep not easily wak'd) as she slept by the fire, I took my opportunity, and melted some glew, and taking up her coats, with a brush dipt in the glew, gently stroakt her---till that I had closed up: the Maid not presently waking, it had so cemented the part, that the collaterals were not easily to be disjoyned. The wench starting up to make water, found her self unable; she thought at first she had been bewitcht, till more plainly the cause of this stoppage did appear, was at last with great loss, pain and difficulty cured. That he going about to correct me for this obscene and mischievous fact, was by me shown a very *shitten trick*, which put him into a *stinking condition*; for having made my self laxative, on purpose squirted into his face upon the first lash given. That being upon a boys back, ready to be whipt, I had often bit holes in their ears. That another time sirreverencing in a paper, and running to the window with it, which lookt out into the yard, my aged Mistress looking up to see who opened the Casement, I had lik'd to have thrown it into her mouth; however for a time deprived her of that little sight she had left. That another time I had watcht some lusty young Girles, that used in Summer-nights about twelve a clock, to wash themselves in a small brook near adjacent, and that I

had

had concealed my ſelf behind a Buſh, and when they were ſtript, took away their cloaths, making them dance home after me ſtark naked, to the view of their ſweet-hearts, whom I had planted in a place appointed for that purpoſe, having given them before notice of my deſign. A great many more ſuch tricks he recounted, which he knew, but not the tenth of what he knew not. As for example, on *Chriſtmas*-day, we had a pot of Plumb-broth, I askt the Maid to taſte, to ſee how I liked them: *I that I ſhould*, ſhe ſaid, (this was the Maid I had ſo ſerved before with glew) and with that takes up a ladle full, and did bid me ſup, ſhe holding the ladle in her own hand, I imprudently opening my mouth ſomewhat larger then I ſhould, ſhe pours down the ſcalding Pottage through my throat: at preſent I could not tell the Jade (that laught till ſhe held her ſides) how I liked them; but I verily believed I had ſwallowed the *Gunpowder-Plot*, expecting every moment to be *blown up*. I took as little notice of this paſſage as poſſibly I could, reſolving to retalliate her kindneſs. I obſerved the Maid to carry this Plumb-pottage-pot into the yard, and taking notice that the weight of the Jack was in the ſame yard wound up a great height under a great Pent-houſe, the Jack being down, I ſuddenly removed the weight, and faſtned the Pot to the line; ſo going into the Kitching, wound it up to the top, and then ſtopt it, for the meat was taken up. The houſe was all in an uproar inſtantly about the Pot, every one admiring what ſhould become of it: The Maid averred, that ſhe ſee it even now, and none could remove it but the Devil. Others aſſerted (which were infected with *Puritaniſm*) that it was a Judgment ſhown for the ſuperſtitious obſervation of that Feſtival

day;

day; but the next day, roasting Meat, this seeming Miracle vanished by the descending of the Pot fastened to the Jack-line. Another time my Master had reserved in his Garden some choice Aprecocks, not aboye an half-score, which he purposed for some friends that intended to visit him shortly: The daily sight of this delicate fruit, being forbidden, tempted me more strongly to attempt their Rape; but I made choice of an impropitious hour to accomplish my design in; for my Master lookt out of his window and saw me gather them, though he knew not absolutely whether it was I or no. Whereupon, he instantly summoned us together: being met, I quickly understood his intention, therefore I conveyed the Aprecocks into the next boys Pocket; I had no sooner done it, but we were commanded to be search'd: I was very forward to be the first, though I was most suspected, but none was found about me, so that I was acquitted. But to see with what amazement the poor boy gazed, when they were discovered about him, how strangely he look'd, distorting his face into several forms, produced laughter even from my incensed Master, but real pity from me; for he was severely whipped for that Crime I my self committed. I could recite many more such like Childish roguries, did I not fear I should be tedious in their relation, and burden the Reader with juvenile follies; therefore I shall return where I left off. Whilest my Mother was in a serious consultation with her Reason, how she should dispose of me, I gave her the slip, resolving to run the resk of Fortune, and try whether mine own endeavours would supply my necessities.

CHAP. III.

How he ran from his Mother, and what courſes he ſteered in one whole years Ramble.

IT was in *Auguſt* when I undertook this my Knight-errantry; the fairneſs of the Seaſon much favoured my Enterpriſe: thinking I ſhould always enjoy ſuch weather, and never be pincht with neceſſity, I went on very couragiouſly. The firſt dinner I made was on Blackberries and Nuts, eſteemed by me very delicious fare at firſt, which delighted me ſo much the more, having not my liberty controul'd. When night approached it ſeemed very uncouth and ſtrange, finding, inſtead of a Feather-bed, no other thing to lie on but a *Haycock*, and no other *coverlid* but the *Canopy of Heaven*. However, this diſturbed not my reſt, for I ſlept profoundly. In the morning I went on in my progreſs as the day before; then began a ſhower of tears to fall from my eyes, conſidering how I had left my diſconſolate, and almoſt heart-broken Mother, lamenting my loſs, and that I was travelling I knew not whither moneyleſs, eſpecially finding the grudgings of hungers gripings. Methought I began to loath my aforenamed *Manna*, and longed to taſte of the *Fleſh-pots*, but the *Devil a bit* could I get but what the hedges afforded me. Night came on, which put me in mind of procuring a lodging ſomewhat warmer than the other. A Barn preſently offered its ſelf to my ſight, which I accoſted, and

and without delay tumbled my ſelf over head and ears in freſh ſtraw. I had not laid there above an hour before I heard a noiſe, and peeping out of the ſtraw, being in a great fear, I ſaw a many ſtrange creatures come into the Barn, for the day was not yet ſhut in. My thoughts preſently reminded me that I had heard talk of Hobgoblings, Fairies and the like, and judged theſe no other; and that which confirmed me in this belief, was their talking to one another in a language I underſtood not, (but ſince, I underſtand it to be Canting.) I lay ſtill as long as my fear would permit me, but they ſurrounding me, I was not able to contain my ſelf longer, but cryed out aloud, *Great God, have mercy on me, and let not theſe Devils devour me*; and with that, ſtarted out from among them: They amazed as much as I, ran for it too, leaving their children behind them, every one eſteeming him the happieſt man which was the foremoſt. I looking behind me, ſeeing them following me, imagined theſe Devils would hunt me ſo long that I ſhould not eſcape, wherefore I fell inſtantly on my knees & prayed: the Gypſies quickly overtook me, and finding me in that poſture, ſoon underſtood whence their fear proceeded. They then ſpoke to me in a Language I underſtood, bidding me not be afraid; and if I would accompany them, I ſhould fare as they did. I could not be perſwaded, either to believe or truſt them longer than that night, ſpending the time either in boozing, or wapping, ſuch terms as they uſe, that is, either drinking or whoring, promiſcuouſly lying one with another: for this canting Crew allow of Community, it being free for any to make choice of what Doxie he liketh beſt, changing when he pleaſeth. They ply'd

me oft with Rumbooz, and pleaſed me ſo well in giving me a young Rum Mort to dally with, that I was much delighted in their converſation, reſolving to liſt my ſelf one of that ragged Regiment: For pennyleſs and Friendleſs I than was, and by that two days ſlenderneſs of diet, I judged how great my wants would be, if I took not ſome courſe for a livelihood, having not wherewithal to ſpend, or means to defray my neceſſary expence.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Wherein he Relates what manner of People they were into whose Society he entered himself; division of their Tribes, Manners, Customs, and Language.

AS soon as I had resolved to travel the Country with them, they fitted me for their company, by stripping me, and selling my proper garments, and cloathing me in rags, which they pinn'd about me, giving a stitch here and there, according as necessity required. We used not when we entered our *Libkin*, or Lodging, to pull off our cloaths; which had I been forced to do, I could never have put them on again, nor any, but such who were accustomed to produce *Order* out of a *Babel of rags*. Being now *ale mode de Tatterdemallion*, to compleat me for their purpose, with green Walnuts they so discoloured my face, that every one that saw me, would have sworn I was the true Son of an *Egyptian*. Before we marcht on, let me give you account of our Leaders, and the rancks we were disposed in. Our chief Commander was called by the name of *Ruffler*, the next to him *Upright-man*, the rest in order thus:

Hookers, (alias) *Anglers.*	*Prigges.*
Priggers of Prancers.	*Swadlers.*
Pallyards.	*Curtals.*
Praters.	*Irish-toyle.*

Swigmen.	*Dommerars.*
Jarkemen.	*Glymmerer.*
Patri-Coes.	*Bawdy-Baskets.*
Kitchin-Coes.	*Autem Morts.*
Abram men.	*Doxies.*
Whip-Jacks.	*Dells.*
Counterfeit-Cranks.	*Kitchin-Morts.*

We mustered above Threescore old and young; and because we were too great a company to march together, we were divided into three Squadrons. The first Squadron that led the Van, was ordered by our Commander, to stick up small boughs all the way they went, that we might know what course they steered. For like wilde foul we flie one after another, and though we are scattered like the Quarters of a Traytor, yet like water when cut which a Sword, we easily come together again. As the *Switzer* hath his Wench and his Cock with him when he goes to Wars; or like a *Scotch Army*, where every Soldier almost hath the *Gend-wife*, and the *Bearns* following him: So we had every one his Doxy or Wench, who carried at her back a *Lullaby-cheat*, and it may be another in her arms. When they are weary of carrying them, they take their turns to put them in a pair of Panniers, like Green Geese going to Market, or like Fish in Dossers coming from Rye. Where note, that each division hath a small Horse or two, or else Asses to ease them of their burdens. Some of us were clad Antickly with Bells and other toys, meerly to allure the Countrey people unto us which most commonly produced their desired effects. In some places they would flock unto us in great quantities, & then was our time to make our markets. We pretended an acquaintance with the Stars (as having an Alliance

to the *Egyptian Magi*, the Founders of Aſtrologick Art) and that the Miniſters of Fate were our Familiars, and ſo poſſeſſing theſe poor ignorant people with a belief, that we could tell their Fortunes by inſpection into either hands or faces; whileſt we were ſeriouſly looking thereon, one of our *Diving Comrades* pickt their Pockets, or with a ſhort ſharp Knife, and a Horn on the Thumb, *nipt* their *bangs*. By asking the ſilly Milk-maids queſtions, we gathered from their own mouths the propereſt reſolutions: Then would they admire, and in their admiration tremble to hear the truth proceed from the mouth of ſuch as were ſtrangers to their actions; by which means, among ſome we gained a great reſpect, accompanied with fear. Did not Aſtrologers make uſe of ſuch Stratagems, they could never acquire ſo much repute among the judicious, as well as vulgar capacities. And becauſe it falls in ſo pat to my preſent purpoſe, I ſhall beg ſo much patience from the Reader, as to give him a brief account of ſome fallacies, ſome *Star-gazing Impoſtors* uſe to work their own ends, and delude credulous people. One whereof I knew, who raiſed his credit (and ſince a conſiderable eſtate) upon the Baſis of good intelligence. He kept a ſervant, who conſtantly attended below the reception of ſuch, who came for ſatisfaction in the Aſtrological Reſolution of Queſtions. This mans Office was to tell the Querent, *That his Maſter was buſie above, about ſome grand concern, but if the perſon would be pleaſed to wait a little while, till that buſineſs was diſpatched; he queſtioned not but that his Maſter would render him a ſatisfactory account of what he demanded:* Adding farther, (to infuſe into him faith, to credit what he ſaid) *That though report had ſpoken largely*, and yet nothing but what this

Artiſt hath merited) *yet all came far ſhort of his real deſert, having done ſuch ſtupendious things; that muſt needs (without injuſtice) be commemorized to Eternity, and admired by future ages.* In the mean time, this ſervant endeavored to pump out of the Proponent what he came about, which having underſtood, he gave information to his Maſter by ſo many time ringing a Bell. This *item* being given, the Querent is called up, and before ever he can frame his mouth to propound his queſtion, this profound Artiſt prevents him, ſaying, *I know what you come about Sir, (therefore ſave your ſelf the labor to tell me that which I know already) you have loſt a Watch, a Horſe; or you would know how you ſhall proſper in ſuch a buſineſs, whether Marriage, or an Imployment, or any ſuch like common queſtion.* This makes the Artiſt be wondered at; and than erecting a Scheme, poſitively and ſurlily tells him what he muſt expect. And that he might give anſwers more exactly concerning ſtoln goods, he was in conſtant fee with *Thie-takers*, who from time to time, made him a report of what perſons were robbed, what the things were, and many times gave him a deſcription of the Fellon. By theſe practices, men believed every word he delivered to be an Oracle; ſo that his Chamber was daily ſo thronged with the reſort of people, that in a ſhort time his ambition pricked him on to purchaſes, with the money he had gained thus fallacioully. One ſtory very remarkable, I ſhall add, and then crave your pardon for this my digreſſion. One day a young Gentleman (but of a mean eſtate) came to him, who was more credulous than wiſe, and more inquiſitive than prudent; and having not that wealth which his prodigality required, deſired inſtructiõs what courſe

he

he was beſt to ſteer to arrive at the Port of his wiſhes and hopes: viewing him narrowly, he perceived him to be a man of a ſweet complexion, and a body well proportioned; and therefore judged him a fit ſubject for Female fancies to work upon. *Sir* (ſaid he) *I ſhall give you my beſt advice, but I ſhall crave your patience for a little while, for a matter of this weight muſt not precipitately be undertaken: wherefore if you pleaſe to ſee me to morrow, what lies in me ſhall be at your ſervice.* Being juſt gone, it happened that a *Stale Maid*, who had more money than beauty, and leſs diſcretion than lechery, came to be reſolved of him, *When ſhe ſhould be married*: (for it ſeems by the ſequel ſhe could tarry no longer:) viewing her well, (though ſhe knew not him) he knew her to be wealthy, and nearly related to perſons of Quality. *Madam*, (ſaid he) *I ſhall endeavour your ſatisfaction*, and ſo withdrew into his Cloſet. Having ſtaid a while, bringing out his Figure, and with much gravity looking thereon, he thus unridled the myſterious meanings of the Celeſtial Bodies. *Madam, You never was much troubled with the importunate ſuits of amorous Viſitants* (this he gathered from the deformity of her Phiſiogminy) *they all knowing your indifferency to change your condition, but upon conſiderable grounds, by which means you have almoſt fruſtrated what the Stars have deſigned for you. I hope it is but almoſt*, (ſaid ſhe) *not altogether*: for it troubled her very much to hear ſhe ſhould leave the world without taſting the ſweets of a married life. *No*, (he replied, *for if to morrow by four of the Clock in the Afternoon you go into* Moorfields, *and take a turn or two in the* Uſurers Walk) *you ſhall there meet with a perſon rich and handſome, that at firſt ſight ſhall fall in love extreamly with you: ſlight him not, neither deny*

him

him his conjugal propoſal if you do, it will be too late to hope for an husband. You ſhall diſtinguiſh him from others by theſe ſigns: His Complexion is fair, his Eye ſharp and piercing, his Hair flaxen, of a middle Stature. Her joy had like to have tranſported her beyond the bounds of modeſty, which ſhe could not conceal, but made it appear in a pecuniary expreſſion of her gratitude for ſuch welcome tidings; and ſo promiſing him to follow his counſel, ſhe took her leave. The next morning the young Gallant came, who had his leſſon given him: but before he went, he made him give him a Bond of 200 *l.* to be paid upon the day of his marriage with that Gentlewoman: which he gladly conſented to, and paid that very ſum within ten days after: for according to the directions was given him, he met with that Gentlewoman deſcrib'd to him, as he had been before to her, who at the firſt ſight of each other, were incapable of containing themſelves, but mutually imbraced (after three or four words paſt) at if he had been her (*quondam*) Dearly Beloved, returned from ſome long Voyage, and went not to their reſpective lodgings till their marriage was conſummated. But to return where I left off.

Thus we rambled up and down the Country; and where the people demean'd themſelves not civil to us by voluntary contributions, their Geeſe, Hens, Pigs, or any ſuch mandible thing we met with, made us ſatisfaction for their hide-bound injuries. Our revenge moſt commonly was very bloody, and ſo mercileſs, that whatever fell into our hands, never eſcaped alive, and in our murders ſo cruel, that nothing would ſatisfie us but the very hearts-blood of what we killed. The uſual ſacrifices of our inplacable revenge, were innocent Lambs, Sheep, Calves,

&c.

&c. All which we handled more severely than prisoners are by Serjeants, when they are not paid their unjust Demands. Fees, I should have said, but that by experience I have found, they walk not according to the Rules of ancient Constitutions, but are guided by the dictates of their insatiate wills, which is their Law, which poor Prisoners must indulge, (though they rack their slender credits, or pawn their cloaths) or else they must expect less kindness from them, than a condemned person about to be tyed up by the Hangman, who will stay till he is ready to be turned off. A Goose coming among us, we have a trick to make him so wise, as never to be a Goose again: But let the wisest use what tricks they can, they never shall make some Serjeants honest men. We seize the prey, and leave the Tragical part to our *Morts* or Women to act: the *Stage* on which they perform their parts, is either some large *Heath*, or *Firz-bush-Common*, far from any House. This being done, and night approaching, we repair to our Dormitories, or Houses of Rest, which are most usually Out-barns of Farmers and Husbandmen, which we make choice of in some poor straggling Village, who dare not deny us, for fear ere the morning they finde their Thatch-houses too hot to hold them. These Barns serve us in stead of Cook-Rooms, Supping Parlours, and Bed-Chambers; having Supt, (most commonly in a plentiful manner) we cannot *Couch a Hogshead*, that is to say, Sleep, without good store of *Rhum-booze*, that is, Drink; and having sufficiently warmed our brains with humming Liquor, which our *Lowre* (Silver) shall procure; if our deceitful *Maunding* (begging) cannot, we then sing a Catch or two in our own Language, of which we had good store; which

for

for their baudry I omit: However, give me leave to instance one Canting Song, and I shall wave the rest, being loath to tire you too much with one thing.

Bing out bien Morts, and toure, and toure,
Bing out bien Morts, and toure;
For all your Duds are bing'd awast,
The bien Cove hath the loure.
I met a Dell, I view'd her well,
She was benship to my watch;
So she and I did stall, and cloy,
Whatever we could catch.
This Doxie Dell can cut bien whids,
And wap well for a win;
And prig and cloy so benship'ly,
All the Deusea-vile within.
The boyle was up, we had good luck,
In Frost for and in Snow:
When they did seek, then did we creep,
And plant in Ruff-mans low.
To Strawling Ken the Mort bings then,
To fetch loure for her cheats;
Duds and Ruffe-peck, Rombold by Harman-beck,
And won by Maunders feats.
Ye Maunders all, stow what you stall,
To Rome Coves what so Quire,
And wapping Dell, that niggles well,
And takes loure for her hire.
And Fybe well jerkt, took rome consect,
For bick by glymmar to Maund;
To mill each ken, let Cove bing then,
Through Ruff-mans, Jague, or Laund,
Till Cramprings quire tip Cove his hire,
And Quire Ken do them catch:

A Canniken , mill quire Cuffen,
So Quire to ben Coves watch.
Bien Darkmans then , Bouſe Mort and Ken,
The bien Coves bings awaſt,
On Chates to trine by Rome-Coves dine,
For his long lib at laſt.
Bing'd out bien Morts and toure, and toure,
Bing out of the Rome vile bine,
And toure the Cove that cloyd your duds ,
Upon the Chates to trine.

Having even wearied our ſelves with drinking and ſinging, we tumbled promiſcuouſly together , Male and Female in Straw , not confining our ſelves to one conſtant Conſort , we make uſe of the firſt that comes to hand ; by which means Inceſts and Adulteries become our paſtimes. By this means I grew weary of their practices , and therefore reſolved to deſert them as ſoon as the firſt opportunity ſhould offer it ſelf, which was in a ſhort time ; wherefore at the preſent I ſhall ſay no more of them , onely give me leave to give ſome ſmall account of their Language. The firſt Inventor of Canting, as I am informed, was hanged about fourſcore years ſince : ſuch *Gibberiſh* was never heard of before , ſince which time , there hath not been wanting ſuch , who have taken pains in the polliſhing , refining , and augmenting that Language of the *Devils Imps.* It is a confuſed invention of words ; for its Dialect I cannot finde to be grounded on any certain Rules ; and no wonder, ſince the Founders and Practicers thereof , are the chief Fathers and Nouriſhers of Diſorder. Yet even out of that Irregularity a man may obſerve ſome kinde of form, and ſome words do retain ſomething of Schorlarſhip, as *Togeman* a Gown, from *Toga*; *Pannam*,

nam, from *Panis*, Bread; *Cosan*, *Caseus*, Cheese. The monosyllable *Cheat*; we use as a Relative, as *Nab*, a Head; *Nab-cheat*, a Hat, *&c. Cove* or *Cuffin* is in general terms a Man; but by adding *bien*, which signifies good, or well, or *Quire*, which is wicked or Knavish; you make the word *Cove* signifie an *Honest man*, or a *Justice of Peace*. Pardon the expression, for they call a Justice *Quier-Cuffin*; that is to say, as before-mentioned, a wicked, knavish, or foolishman. To conclude, I shall here insert this little Canting Vocabulary Alphabetically.

Autem Mort	A Married Woman
Abram	Naked
Abram Cove	A Tatterdemallion
Autem	A Church
Bughar	A Cur
Bouse	Drink
Bousing Ken	An Ale-house
Borde	A Shilling
Boung	A Purse
Bien	Good or well
Benshiply	Very well
Benar	Better
Bing	To go
Bing a waste	To go away
Bube	The Pox
Buse	A Dog
Bleating cheat	A Sheep
Belly cheat	An Apron
Betty	An Instrument to break a (door
Cove	A Man
Cuffin	

Cuffin Quire	A Juſtice of Peace
Cramprings	Bolt or Shackles
Chats	The Gallows
Canke	Dumb
Crackmans	Hedges
Calle	
Togeman	A Cloak
Joſeph	
Couch	To lye or ſleep
Couch a Hogſhead	To go to ſleep
Commiſſion	A Shirt
Cackling cheat	A Chicken
Caſſan	Cheeſe
Craſh	To kill
Craſhing cheats	Teeth
Cloy	To ſteal
Cut	To ſpeak
Cut bien whids	To ſpeak well
Cut quire whids	To ſpeak evilly
Confeck	Counterfeit
Cannakin	The Plague
Cly the Jerk	To be whipt
Clapperdogeon	A Begger born
Culle	A Sap-headed Fellow
Dimber	Pretty
Damber	Raſcal
Drawers	Stockings
Duds	Goods
Denſea-vile	The Countrey
Dommerar	A Madman
Darkmans	Night or Evening
Doxie	
Dell	A Wench

Duck

Dock, *Wap*	To Swive
Denswins	Two pence
Dup	To enter
Earnest	A part
As tip me my Earnest	Give me my part or share
Frummagem	Choakt
Filch	A Staff
Ferme	A Hole
Fambles	Hands
Famble cheats	Rings or Gloves
Fib	To beat
Flag	A Groat
Fogus	Tobacco or Smoke
Glymmer	Fire
Glaziers	Eyes
Grannam	Corn
Gentry Mort	A Gallant Wench
Gan	A Lip
Gage	A Pot or Pipe
Grunting cheat	A Sucking Pig
Giger	A Door
Gybe	Any Writing or Pass
Harmanbeck	A Constable
Harmans	The Stocks
Heave a Booth	To rob an House
Half bord	Six pence
Hearts ease	A twenty shillings piece
Jocky	A Flayl or mans Privities
Jague	A Ditch
Jarke	A Seal
Ken	An House
Kinchin	Little

Kinchin Cove	A little man
Kate	A Pick-lock
Loure	Money
Lightmans	Morning or day
Lib	To tumble
Libken	An House to lie in
Lage	Water
Libbege	A Bed
Lullabie-cheat	A Childe
Lap	Pottage
Maunder	To Beg
Maunders	Beggers
Margery Prater	An Hen
Mill	To steal
Make	An half-penny
Mynt	Gold
Muffling cheat	A Napkin
Mumpers	Gentile Beggers
Nab	An Head
Nab-cheat	An Hat
Nap	To take / Or cheat
Palliard	One whose Father is a Begger born
Paplar	Milk-Pottage
Prats	Thighs
Prigg	To Ride
Peckidge	Meat
Pannam	Bread
Plant	To lay or hide
Prigging	Riding
Prancer	An Horse
Prating cheat	A Tongue

Plant your whids	Have a care what you say
Quarron	A Body
Quacking cheat	A Duck
Quier	Wicked or Roguish
Quier-Ken	A Prison
Quier-Mort	A Pocky Jade
Quier-Cove	A Rogue
Romboyle	A Ward or Watch
Rome	Gallant
Rome-vile	London
Rome-Mort	A Gallant Girl
Ruffin	The Devil
Ruffler	An over-grown Rogue
Ruffe-peck	Bacon
Red-shanke	A Mallard
Rom-pad	The High-way
Rome-padders	High-way-men
Rome-Culle	A Rich Coxcomb
Stamps	Legs
Scoure	To wear
Skew	A Dish
Slate	A Sheet
Strommel	Straw or Hair
As; She hath good store of Strommel on her Merkin	Anglice, &c.
Skepper	A Barn
Stow you whids	Be wary
Stalling-Ken	A Brokers House, or an House to receive stolen Goods.
Smeling-cheat	A Garden
Solomon	The Mass
Toure	To look out

Tib o' th' Buttery	A Gooſe
Tib	To give
The Mort tipt me a wink	The Whore gave me a wink
Trine	Tyburn
Trining	Hanging
Tick-Rome	A Licenſe
Tres wins	Three pence
Win	A Penny
Yarum	Milk

Thus much for a taſte: I think it not worth my pains to inſert all thoſe Canting words which are uſed; it is enough that I have here divulged what words are moſt in uſe. Having now deſerted this *Lawny Crew*, I reſolved to betake my ſelf to a new Trade; which you ſhall underſtand in this following Diſcourſe.

CHAP. V.

How he went a Begging. What Rules he obſerv'd therein. What Villanies he committed whilſt he profeſt that myſterious Art.

NEceſſity is a thing better known by the effects, than its character; and of all things the moſt inſufferable: to prevent which, it puts a man on to venture upon all manner of diſhoneſt and dangerous actions, ſuggeſting ſtrange imaginations, and deſperate reſolutions, ſoliciting things infamous, and attempting things impoſſible; the product of which is onely diſorder, confuſion, ſhame, and in the end ruine. But when Neceſſity ſhall conjoyn with an evil diſpoſition, a deprav'd nature, what horrid and nefarious facts will it not inſtigate that man to perpetrate? And though he ſeeth monthly examples of perſons condemned and executed for the like crimes he daily practiſeth, will not forbear nor deſiſt from ſuch irregular and life-deſtroying courſes, till they have brought him to the like miſerable Cataſtrophe. Neceſſity had now deeply faln in love with me; and the young Virgin Shamefac'dneſs (once my Miſtreſs) had forſaken me: for as ſoon as I had pull'd but one thread out of her garment, all the reſt unravell'd; and ſhe not brooking her nakedneſs, changed her maſter, and ſo totally

tally left me. In this condition as I travelled, I begg'd with very good success. But me thought my life was somewhat uncomfortable without a Companion, (all Creatures coveting society, but more especially Man:) at length, according to my desires, I met with one, whose long practice in this Art, (besides the Observations of his Predecessors, deriving his Pedegree in a direct line from *Prince Prigg*) indu'd him with so much skill, as to furnish me with the knowledge of any thing that belonged to the liberal Art of Begging. We straight betook our selves to the *Boozing-Ken*, and having *bubb'd rhumly*, we [illegible] an everlasting friendship: then did he recount to me the most material things observeable in our Profession. First, he tun'd my voice to that pitch which might most of all raise compassion; then he told me when we came to *London*, he would acquaint me what places were most fit for our purpose, and what times. That I ought not to be too importunate to some, alwayes wishing well, and loudly praying for the health and safety of Estate and Limbs of such as deny'd me Alms; but more especially pronounce a *God bless you Master, and let heaven reward what you have here done on earth*, if any thing bestowed upon me. If any should pitty my nakedness, and cloath me in garments without holes in them, I should wear them no longer then in the Donors sight, reserving my rags to re-invest my self, and sell the other, as unfit and scandalous to our Occupation. That we should never beg far from one another, and at nights faithfully share the gaines. Moreover, he inform'd me the way to make all sorts of seeming sores and lameness. That within the tatter'd rags, there be places provided for

private conveyance. Some of maturer age, if they have no Children, rent them of ſuch as have: but we had no occaſion for this fallacie. That if I ſaw a doör open, I ſhould go in boldly; if I met any in the way, I ſhould then in a very ſubmiſſive manner implore their help in the aſſiſtance of my wants, never deſiring any thing but what was of ſmall value, one halfe-peny, farthing, or ſome broken cruſt, pretending the not eating of a bit in two dayes. If the paſſage was clear, whip away that was neareſt to hand. That the time of riſing in the morning be very early, ſhewing my ſelf in the ſtreets: for then will thoſe that paſs by, judg I have no other lodging but what a ſtall affords, that way procuring reliefe from pitiful-minded perſons, and ſo continue begging till the evening: when it beginneth to be duſkiſh, if any then walks ſingly, accoſt him in a begging form; coming up ſo cloſe, as that you may knock him down with a Truncheon, ſtill carried about for that purpoſe; which is done ſecurely, and many times with a good booty.

Being full fraught with theſe, and many more precepts he delivered, we ſet forth on our progreſs. We had not gone far, before we were ſurprized by the Conſtable, as two ſturdy Vagrants; and as *handſel* to my new Trade, we were both ſoundly whipt out of town. To avoid this danger for the time to come, we miſt all the towns of any conſiderable note in our way, and onely frequented Villages; nay, we were forc'd to avoid the High-wayes: for Travellers obſerving our garb, countenances, and weapon, which was a battoon, ſuſpecting us, would before they came near us, ſet ſpurs to their horſes, and ride as if the devil drove them. Many petty rogueries

we

we performed by the way, not worthy the commemoration, and therefore I ſhall paſs them over; only this I ſhall inſert.

Travelling the Field way, we ſtumbled on a *Tinker* and his *Trull* lying by an Hedge-ſide; I aſkt them what they lay there for? They anſwered me, That they were lately bitten by a Serpent near adjacent, a potent creature, mighty in ſtrength, and of a vaſt proportion. I deſired them to ſhew us the place of his reſidence, which they readily conſented to. Inſtead of this Venomous Animal, they only brought us to its repreſentation in a ſign, where a Cup of double-brew'd Beer was ſold. The people lik'd the Tinker and his Female comrade well enough, but would not admit of us, till we ſhew'd them money: For our Veſtments look'd like the Gleanings of a Rag-merchants Yard. We drank ſtifly till we laid the Woman aſleep: ſhe had not ſlept long, but up ſhe ſtarted, pull'd up her coats, and piſs'd in the middle of the room, and ſo ſat her ſelf down, yet awaked not: which action could not but produce much laughter from me and my Comrade. At laſt the Tinker fell aſleep too, having gotten a greater load than he could well carry. Now had my wits enough to worke on: but finding my ſelf very drowſie, for the ſtrength of the drink had almoſt over-powered me, inſomuch that I was forc'd to adviſe with my friend what courſe I were beſt take to make me a little more ſober: he was ſo well known in ſuch matters, (being an old experienced Pitcher-man) that he quickly councelled me what to do, he himſelf being not in the leaſt diſturb'd. This was his advice; he got a pail full of water, and ſo taking me up by the heels, clapt my head there-

into; holding me in that manner ſo long, that the *Pail* had like to have prov'd the *Ferry-boat* that ſhould waſt me over the *Stygian Lake*; however, coming to my ſelf, I found it had wrought its deſired effects.

After this, we ranſackt their pockets, but found little in the mans; but ſearching the woman in a private place between her Pocket and Placket, we diſcovered ſomething conſiderable, which we took. Having ſo done, we thought it high time to be gone; but firſt we reſolv'd to make ſome ſport, as well as take their moneys, which was thus: I ty'd to each of their Girdles behind a Flaggon-pot, and to each a Label affixt, or a paper of Verſes, and ſo immediately tript off. The Hoſt ſeeing us go out of doors with more than ordinary ſpeed, ran into the room where the *Tinker* and his *Lady* were: he ſuddenly awakt them, telling them we were gone. Hearing this, they haſtily ſtarted up, and ran to over-take us: the Maſter of the houſe ſeeing his Pots dangling at their breech, ran after the *Tinker*, crying, *Stop 'em, ſtop 'em*; the Hoſte bearing the ſame note, *Stop the thieviſh Tinker, ſtop the Whore with my Pot.* This Out-cry ſoon alarm'd the ears of his Neighbours, who with the Hoſt ſeizing on them, and carrying them back, gave us an opportunity for our eſcape. The Lines that were about the *Tinkers* Pot, were theſe, to my beſt remembrance.

Serpents but ſting, or only bite ſo deep,
To numb the ſenſe, ſo lay men faſt aſleep.
Wit acts far greater things. I'll ſay no more;
Pay firſt for fleeting, then the Pots reſtore.

Thoſe

Thoſe that were faſtened to the Womans Pot, were theſe:

'Twas not the Serpent, but ſtrong Beer that ſtung:
The vent *being* ſtopt, *the Drink wrought through*
the Bung.
Tet 'twas a Viper *ſure; I heard him* hiſs:
I look't, and found him all diſſolv'd to Piſs.
Had her Braſs Squire *but ſtopt her* Leak *at laſt,*
She had not let her Liquor *out ſo faſt.*

From hence we went ſtraight for *London*, where we ſoon arriv'd.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Coming to London, *he enters himself into the Society of Beggears, distinguished by these Titles*, Ben-setters, Dommerars, Clapperdogeons, *&c. With a short description of their Manners and Customs; as also a Relation of a piece of Theft he committed.*

COming up to *London*, we straight way betook our selves to *Newington-Butts*; but by the way, my Friend could not forbear calling on his Friends in *Kent-street*; here they gave me a Nick-name; and my Comrade immediately fell to work, to put himself into an equipage fit for the employment we had undertaken. He needed not to alter his habit; but his chief aime was to make counterfeit Sores or Cleymes, according to the term of Art that is given them. With the assistance of some of the Fraternity, he had in an hours time, such a Leg, that I could hardly look upon it without even dropping down; and thus they made it: They took unslaked Lime and Sope, mingled with the rust of old Iron; these being well temper'd together, they did spred it thick on two pieces of Leather, which they applyed to his Leg, binding it thereunto very hard, which in a short time did fret off the skin, the flesh appearing all raw; then did they take blood, and rub'd it all over his Leg; which being fully dried, made

made the Leg appear all black; the Sore they did only let peep out of the holes of five or six matterish clouts. He soon got us a Doxie too, with a couple of children (the fitter for our purpose) the one to carry in her arms, and the other to lead, providing himself and me a good lusty *Filch* or Stick, with a hole at the end thereof, to put in a hook if occasion should serve, to filch any thing off Hedges, &c. Away we went into *Moor-fields:* he would have made me a *Cleyme* too, or an Artificial sore; but my stomack would no wayes accept of his kindness. Coming into th' Fields, he planted me in a convenient place, the *Doxie* with her *Lullaby-cheats* in another, and himself in a third, not far distant from one another, that one might catch the others *Maunding* at the rebound: I observ'd my *Friend* and Rogue diligently, what he did, for my own information. One would have sworn he had been absolutely lame, for (about to lie down) he slid to the earth by his Staff; being on the ground, the first thing I took notice of, was the pitious distorting of his face into various forms, to stir up compassion in such as passed by him; to which he added a most doleful noise, to this effect; *For Gods-sake, some tender-hearted Christians, cast through your merciful eyes, one pitiful look, upon a sore, lame, and miserable wretch: Bestow one penny or half-penny upon him that is ready to perish, &c.* I knew not how to tune my voice, for hearkening to him; which he observing (when all the people were passed by) he held up his stick at me, a strong argument of his great displeasure, which lest I might farther incur, I was forced to tone it out to some purpose. Night approaching, we lest of begging, resolving to recreat our selves with what we had

had god: in the way home, I ſaw a very fine piece of Beef lying on a Butchers ſtall: the woman that kept the Shop, was telling a Goſſips tale to her neighbour ſo intentively, as I thought I might ſeize on my pray, and ſhe never the wiſer; with that I boldly ſnatched it up; which an oppoſite neighbour perceiving, ran after me, and ſoon took me. I was brought back before the woman, who was ſo wiſe (forſooth) that ſhe would not receive ſtollen goods, though they were her own; and ſo inraged ſhe was, that nothing would ſerve her turn, but I muſt go before a Juſtice; and to add to my puniſhment, ſhe made me carry the ſtollen Beef openly. Coming before his Worſhip, my accuſation was read, aggravated by many feigned circumſtances. The pitiful and ſad caſts of my eyes, were all the Rhetorick I uſed in my own vindication; which the merciful Juſtice perceiving, they were ſo prevalent, as to gain ſome favour from him; whereupon he ask'd the woman what ſhe valued her Beef at? *Why* (ſaid ſhe) *I would no have abated a penny of five ſhillings. Take heed what you ſay, good woman,* (ſaid he) *for ſhould you ſwear this, it is enough to hang him.* *O Lord, Sir,* (ſaid ſhe) *I would not hang him for a world.* Then ſaid his Worſhip, *You muſt prize it under thirteen pence half-penny*; whereupon the Butchers wife was content to value it at eight pence. The price being ſet, the Beef was conveyed into the Juſtices Kitchin, and the woman put to her Oath; having ſworn, my *Mittimus* was made, and I therewith ſent to Priſon. The woman now thought ſhe ſhould have her Beef, and therefore demanded it; but the Juſtice told her he would buy it of her, and ſo asked her what ſhe would have for it: *Sir,* (ſaid ſhe) *five ſhillings*;

lings; I cannot afford it one farthing under. How, how! (said she) *did not you swear but even now, it was worth but eight pence, and do you now talk of five shillings? A mear Cheat, Extortioner,* &c. Make her *Mittimus,* (speaking to his Clerk) which so terrified the Woman, that she was content to loose her Beef. I am sure I wished those that did eat it, choaked; for never did *Roman Catholick* endure greater and severer *Penance* for eating Flesh on *Good-fryday*, than I for coveting this; I have lov'd a Capon the better for it ever since. Being freed out of Goal by some of our Society, I fell to the old Trade again.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

A Merchant ſeeing him begging, took a fancy to him, conducts him to his Houſe, and entertains him as his Servant.

ONe day as I was begging, more fervently than formerly, having gotten not one penny that day, (there being alſo a civil war between my Guts and Stomack) a Tradeſman of no mean quality, paſſing by, took a ſtrong fancy to me, being extraordinarily pleaſed with the form of my face and body. He asked me, Whence I came? what my Parents were? and what I intended? I anſwered him with well contriv'd forgeries, that ſeemed to give him good ſatisfaction: liking well both my ſpeech and underſtanding, he bid me follow him, which accordingly I did; having conducted me to his houſe, he preſented me to his Wife, my intended Miſtriſs, telling her his reſolutions of receiving me into his ſervice; at which ſhe bleſt her ſelf, ſaying, *Prithee, Sweet-heart, from what Dunghil didſt thou pick up this* Snakerag, *this ſquire of the body?* (for I am ſure I had but few cloaths on, but what were rather fit to dung ground, than to be ſent to the Paper-mill.) Said my Maſter, *Reſt your ſelf ſatisfied, ſince it is my pleaſure this ſhall be ſo: neither can I give you any reaſon for my fancy.* Whereupon he commanded me to be ſtript, and

and well waſhed, in the mean time cloaths were provided for me. It was my good fortune to obſerve my Miſtreſs ſtanding in a private place on purpoſe to ſee me diſmantled; & after I was waſhed, ſhe commended the whiteneſs of my skin and well-proportioned limbs; and by the conſequent, approv'd (within her ſelf) of ſomething elſe; for I was then a ſtubbed Lad. Being new clothed, and raiſed to this unexpected fortune, how ſtrangely did this vain blaſt puff up my empty pate! However I was reſolved to carry my ſelfe diſcreetly, leſt I ſhould overthrow the ſtate I was then in, not yet well ſetled. Wherefore, I behaved my ſelfe very reſpectfully towards him, and ſerved him as punctually as I could, endeavouring that my ſervice ſhould requite his kindneſs in as great a meaſure as my abilities could perform.

My endeavor was not only to pleaſe my Maſter, but my Miſtreſs too, even in the meaneſt ſervices, ſo officious to her, that her Chamber-maid could not perform much more. The Maid-ſervants I obliged alſo, by doing their duty; by which I ſo ingratiated my ſelf among them, that I alwayes had their good eſtimation among themſelves, and good word to my Maſter and Miſtreſs when occaſion ſerved. Very careful I was, not to report what I heard, leſt I by that means involv'd my ſelf in the affairs of others, without advantage to my ſelf. For by medling in others matters, I ſhould breed animoſity among them, and reap juſt hatred to my ſelf. This I looked on as an undeniable maxime, That nothing more recommands a man, than a ſilent tongue, (unleſs neceſſity required the contrary) a fair complacential carriage, and a faithful heart.

My

My Master, in an humour, would sometimes find fault with me, but then it was my chiefest care not to reply, knowing, that what should be alleadged as to my just vindication, would but aggravate his spirits being passionate, alwayes punctually performing what was commanded me. A strange alteration, you will say; but all this was only to get a good esteem, whereby I might gain fast footing. What though I underwent a great deal of pains, and endured, or tryed my patience to the heighth? yet I gain'd much in the end, had God given me grace rightly to use it, and the baseness of my nature not perswaded me to abuse it. So much credit I had gain'd with my Master, by my civil behaviour, that he raised me *gradatim*, step by step. Being ignorant of Arithmetick, he caused a master to come to his house to instruct me, which I soon apprehended, and by that means was capacitated to keep his Accompts, which was the thing I aim'd at, intending thereby the prosecution of mine own ends, notwithstanding my pretended fidelity, and his real kindness to me undeserv'd: which puts me in mind of the conclusion of an Epitaph I have read on a Tomb, which the master erected for the perpetual commemoration of his servants cordial respect and honesty.

View oft this Tomb-stone, smile we seldome find,
A Servants faithful, and his Master kind.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

How he came acquainted with lewd and vicious Apprentices. What Trade they drove together. What places and times of meeting.

I Was as officious at home, as reserved from all company, never stirring forth unless called out by my Masters business, till my next Neighbours man intruded himself into my acquaintance. He met on a time abroad, and would not be deny'd but he must needs fasten a glass of Wine, conducting me to a Tavern where the Drawer (as he said) was his friend. After several Congratulations past, order was given for a pint of Canary: being gone to draw it, this young man began to tell me what an honest fellow this *Ralph* the Drawer was; which words he had no sooner utter'd, but I heard him cry at the Bar, *A Pint of white Wine in the Rose score*; and immediately in he brings it, and in formality a glass, but we made no use of it, for he was fearful his Master would discover the cheat, and therefore made haste, making but two draughts thereof. Away he goes again, and brings in another, not after the same manner, crying it, *Right*, but bringing withal a Quart-Bottle in his Codpiece: *Now, Gentlemen,* (said he) *using your discretion, you may sit and talk freely, without either fear or suspition.* Then my Neighbour *Thomas* told me that this was frequent,

and that he, and two or three friends at any time, could be drunk for ſix pence a piece. *Come, come, you are but a Novice*, ſaid he; *but if you will be ruled by me, I will ſhew you the way to ſoften the cord of bondage, to make the long time of a ſeven years Apprenticeſhip ſeem ſhort, by living as merry, nay, more jovially than our Maſters. They may be diſtracted with cares how to procure neceſſaries, pay Rent, and ſatisfie Creditors, whileſt we have none of theſe preſſures and diſturbances on our ſpirits. What though we have an harſh word, or a ſmart blow, it may be, a broken pate? We will make his Till ſpring a leak for it, or his Goods go to Pot, and break him at laſt too. It may be his Proviſion is neither dainty nor plentiful, nay, reſtrained from our liberty too: 'Tis onely by day then, we will be Maſters of our own at night, not wanting any thing that may conduce to mirth, or the delectation of our inſatiate ſenſes.*

I asked him how could this be done? He anſwered, *If I would ſwear to be ſecret and faithful, and become a Brother of the Society, he would not onely tell me how all this* (afore recited) *might be performed, but would likewiſe introduce me into the place where theſe jolly Blades uſed to congregate.* I ſoon conſented, rejoycing exceedingly at this bleſſed opportunity, (as I thought it) wherein I might ſail in the Ocean of Delight, bound for no other Port but that of Pleaſure or Profit, never conſidering the inevitable Quick-ſands which ſuch meet withal, ſteering that courſe, having no other Compaſs to ſail by than their own Fancy. Firſt, he informed me, that I muſt inſinuate my ſelf into the Maids favour, ſo that, when occaſion ſhould require, ſhe may let you have the Key of the Street-door, or elſe ſit up

for

for your return. That I must never fail coming home to gratifie her kindness. If she be modest and continent, onely kiss her, often repeating this thing to her; *O that I was out of my time, if it were for nothing else but to repay thee thy love! So great an acknowledgment I have of thy civilities, that I hope a time will come wherein I shall make full satisfaction for all*, &c. If she be buckſome, or wantonly given, she will never be content with hopes; wherefore you must kiss, hug, and embrace her, telling how dearly you love her; and then fall to somewhat else: She may put you off at first with a *Piſh*, a *Fye*, or *Pray be civil*; yet be so far from denying, that if you proceed not on vigorously, she will prompt you her self, to try what mettle you are made of. But be very cautious of procreation, which you may prevent several wayes. Now to tell you what manner of persons we are, there are few among us but what are of several Trades selected, as *Linnen-Drapers*, *Mercers*, *Woollen-Drapers*, *Silk-men*, *Hoſiers*, *Haberdaſhers*, *Merchants*, *Grocers*, *Goldſmiths*, *Jewellers*, *Ribband-ſellers*, *Exchange-men*, to which add a *Drawer* and an *Oylman*, the one to furniſh us with good Liquor, and the other to prepare our pallates for it. Every one brings his several Commodities, then do we exchange or barter one with another for what each reſpective person wants, either to ſupply his own occaſion, or his Miſtreſs: For it is to be ſuppoſed ſuch a thing muſt be had; when procured, muſt be maintained, though to the deſtruction of our Maſters Eſtates, and ruine of our bodily health.

All this I liked wonderfully well, and promiſed to meet that day ſeven-night at the place appointed;

and so we parted. Coming home, I immediately put these prescriptions into practice; first; taking notice of what Goods we had greatest quantity; and whatsoever Commodity my Master forgot he had, I always secured it as mine own: nay, sometimes I would try him; *There was such a person enquiring for such a thing to day when you were abroad, but I could not finde it*: it may be he would say, *We had it not*; suiting my design according to desire. Having taken a thorow view of the Shop and Ware-house, I saw so many ways of advantage, if assisted by a cleanly conveyance, that I could snip as well as the most forward of them all.

The next thing I had to do, was to endear my self to the chief maid, who was one of those that assisted to wash me; and as she confest since, took an affection to me from that hour. It required no long time to court her into a compliance, her complexion or temperament forcing her acceptance of any thing amorously inclined: the colour of her Hair inclined to Red, which colour (though I know not for what reason) I love above any: her skin (as the usual attendant of Red or Flaxenish Hair) was as white as Whiteness it self: her Cheeks naturally painted with *Vermilion*; plump were her Cheeks and Lips with a Mole thereon, and a dimple in her Chin, as the infallible marks of one that is willing to dedicate her self to the service of *Venus*. Besides, her small round Breasts by their heaving and setting, seemed to speak what motion she liked best, panting out the ardency of her desire from her very heart, to understand one of the main intents of her Creation, to wit, to *Increase and Multiply*.

Having

Having a fit opportunity, after some amorous discourse, I desired her she would grant me leave that night to talk with her in private, having business of importance to impart to her in private: she condescended to my proposition. As soon as our Master and Mistress were gone to take their rest, her impatience to hear what I would say made her soon send the rest to bed. The house being thus clear'd, and all things silent as the Air, when Winds into their hollow grots repair, I acquainted her with the greatness of my affection, which I delivered with all the Rhetorick I could invent, still touching that string which produced Loves harmonious concord: So fervent I was in my expressions, and so ardent and hot in my desires, that I soon melted the congealed iceness of her Chastity: But first there were mutual Articles reciprocally drawn and agreed unto; *viz.*

That if she proved with childe, I should marry her.

That I should devote my self to her service, and unto else.

That we should both endeavour to make use of all opportunities for the enjoyment of each other.

That to prevent discovery, we should often fall out before people, that without suspition in private we might agree the better; throwing often-times bones at my head when sitting at Dinner, because suspition should not deprive her of the Grizzle. So great was our seeming feud sometimes, that our master was called in to part us.

After this I gave her plenary instructions as to my affairs, which she faithfully and punctually promised to observe. Then did I put my hand to the instrument, and sealed the Articles with two witnesses.

The night was come wherein I was too meet according

cording to promise. I acquainted my *Amoretta* with my intention of going out at twelve a clock; and that my Master might not in the least suspect me, I went to bed, but arose again at the hour promised. The first time I would not carry any Commodities with me, resolving to see first what they did. Being come to the house, I was introduced by my Neighbour *Thomas* into a private back-room, among the associated Brethren. I was much amazed to see such variety of Wares lye upon a long Table, as Silks, Stuffs, Cloth, Linnen and Woollen, Stockings, Ribbands, Muffs, Hoods, Scarffs, and the like. Some of them came to me, and welcomed me as a Brother, drinking to me in a Beer-bowl of Sack and Sugar.

Most of the Company being met, they truckt with each other according to their convenience. Several things were offered me; I told them I had brought nothing to retalliate in lieu: They told me my Credit was good, which is the Soul of Commerce; telling me they should have occasion to make use of me in the like nature. I took with me onely such things as might be proper to bestow at home, on whom I had lately engaged my affections; which I presented her with, accompanied with many expressions and protestations of a never-dying affection. She accepted of my kindness with much gratitude, but thought she could not fully remunerate me without a readmission into her private, and particular favours, I could easily discern her inclinations by griping of my hand, kissing as if she would devour me, the palperation of her heart, and her inflamed eyes. I ran parallel with her in the same desires, so that with much facility we two made

made a Conjunctive Copulative. Having ſported our ſelves ſufficiently, (as I thought) yet nothing would content her but lying together. I ſoon aſſented to it, though to the hazard of both our credits and fortunes. I deſired her to go up firſt, telling her I would follow inſtantly after. By that time I thought ſhe was in bed, up marcht I the ſtairs, which creackt as if they had conſpired a diſcovery of our lechery. Coming up to the higheſt ſtair, I raiſed my foot (being fearful of making any noiſe) thinking there had been another, it deſcended with ſuch precipitation, that I made the houſe eccho. The Chamber wherein my Maſter (and the maid lay in a Trundle-bed underneath them) and my Miſtreſs lay, was right againſt the Stair-head. My maſter had taken a doſe more than ordinary of Sack, ſo that this noiſe awaked him not: my miſtreſs at the firſt hearing thereof, imagined Thieves had broken in; ſhe endeavoured to wake her Husband, by ſtirring him, but could not, therefore thought it the beſt way to lie ſtill, expecting the event. In the mean time I lay *per due*, ſtirring not till I imagined my Miſtreſs aſleep again. The maid, tyr'd out with hot ſervice a little before, and concluding I durſt not adventure further by reaſon of this unfortunate accident, fell immediately into a profound ſleep. Finding (after a conſiderable time) all things ſtill and quiet, I entred the Chamber, dark as Hell, and in a low voice, groaping the contrary way, I cried, *Where art? Here, here*, ſaid my Miſtreſs, in a whiſpering tone: minding from whence the ſound came as near I could, I directed my foot-ſteps to that place: The ſame words being repeated, conveyed me exactly to that ſide of the bed whereon

my Miſtreſs lay. Taking her about the neck, I kiſt her a thouſand times, uſing then all the alluring and loving expreſſions I could invent, not perceiving my miſtake. I made all the haſte I could (and all too little) to undreſs my ſelf; which was done in an inſtant: Opening the Cloths to come to bed, *Hold*, ſaid my Miſtreſs, *I have a Bed-fellow already; what I have ſuffered you to do, was onely as a tryal to underſtand what you intended. Get you gone to your own bed for this night, and I ſhall talk with you farther to morrow.* I durſt not reply, not daring to ſtay longer, but betook my ſelf to my own Chamber, poſſeſt with fear and ſhame, I nothing but toſt and tumbled all that night, taking not the leaſt reſt.

In the morning early I was up, ſhewing my ſelf more than ordinarily diligent. But Lord, what a confuſion I was in, when I ſaw my Miſtreſs come into the Shop? I made an hundred pretences to ſtoop behind the Counter, and rectifie diſordered Wares; So buſie I was with my back towards her that ſhe could not have ſo much as a ſight of me. At length ſhe comes up cloſe to me, and turning me about, ſaid, *Indeed, you take too much pains, you are too laborious; fair and ſoftly; there is a great while to night yet: deſiſt a little, I muſt have a word with you.* Hearing this, I preſumed to look in her face, and was overjoyed; for from thence I received a moſt alluring ſmile, in ſtead of a killing frown. This re-armed me with confidence, compelling from me theſe expreſſions:

Moſt reſpectful Miſtreſs, I do with ſhame confeſs my ſelf in a great errour: but if you will conſider that the cauſe thereof was irreſiſtable; I hope you will in ſome meaſure

measure mitigate my crime. My very youthfulness speaks my Apology. You cannot be ignorant of the fervent heat of young blood, which sometimes boyls beyond its bound. Besides the temperature of my body, (being of a Sanguine complexion) did add much fuel to that fire.

She admired to hear me speak in such a Dialect; but laying aside her wonder, she bid me tell her the whole truth, and what Contract we had concluded. I equivocated in my relation, intending to excuse the maids forwardness, and that I onely designed to surprize her unexpected. This Sophistry of mine did not in the least prevent my Mistresses prying wit, and quick understanding, soon searching out the truth, tracing every meander, finding it out at last, though involved in a labyrinth of obscurities. She told me plainly she knew all, though I endeavoured to conceal it, and *desired* me, in stead of commands, to withdraw my affectionate thoughts from her, since her resolution was to divorce our persons. Adding moreover, that if I was so amorously inclined, as not content without a Female Object to exercise my passion on, I should elect such a one, whose merit grounded on Beauty, Birth, Wealth, and Power, should command my love, and finally eternize my terrestrial happiness; and so vanisht from me, leaving my cogitations to their operations.

Forty five years had not totally destroyed her beauty, but there was still remaining the ruines of a good face: Her Birth, though from a high extraction, had little influence over me, had not her Wealth (which she had at her own disposal) whis-

pered

pered in my ear more than a common felicity. Her laſt words left a deep impreſſion on my imagination, which were not ſo enigmatically delivered, but that I could eaſily interpret them advantagiouſly enough to my purpoſe. I reſolved within my ſelf to acquieſce, leaving this affair to time to bring it to perfection.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

What devices he found out to Cheat his Maſter; and what ways he had to ſpend it laviſhly, at unſeaſonable hours, on Wine, Wenches, &c.

THe time being come again, for the meeting my ſnipping Brethren, I went prepared with what I could conveniently carry with me. Seeing me come well fraught, my merchants preſently clapt me aboard, reſolving not to let my commodities lie long on my hands, our truck was ſoon agreed on to our mutual contents. Then like true Sons of *Bacchus*, we bucculed about, wiſhing him that pledged it not in a dark rainy night on a tyred Jade bare ridg'd in a dirty lane, with a pocky Whore behind him, and his own bones rotten, within nine Miles from an houſe, not knowing one ſtep of his way, nor having one penny in his pocket. This, or the like dreadful execration, made us tumble off whole Boles like ſo many thimbles full. Half a dozen of theſe a piece, were a *preludium* to our Supper, which uſually was compoſed of the choiſeſt viands. Neither could we eat, without our female Conſorts, whom Wine and Muſick waited on. After Supper, we fell again to our old *Bacchanalian* ſport, drinking, or privately treating our Miſtreſſes at a venereal Banquet. When we had drank our ſelves to ſobriety, and

and ſatiated our luſtful appetites, we betook our ſelves to our reſpective habitations, our Maſters not dreaming of our night-Revellings. Our own expences were neither valuable nor comparable to what our Mad-Dames put us to, which were ſo great (though they made me rack my invention to ſupply their pretended neceſſities) that all my various endeavours could not anſwer their expectations. I had taken my Gentlewoman a chamber, for which I payed three ſhillings a week, and upon the bare promiſe of a Whore, that ſhe ſhould prove conſtant to me, I allowed her a weekly penſion beſides; I never came to receive a private favour, but I muſt return her for it, ſome ſpecial and particular courteſie; as a Scarfe, an Hood, a Ring, a Whisk, or rich Lace for her Smock. If I failed at any time of paying my promiſed Tribute, I ſhould be ſeverely checked, nay, ſometimes threatned, That I had undone her; ſhe refuſing, for my ſake, many eminent Matches; that ſhe ſaw her ſelf meerly deluded, and therefore would endure it no longer; telling my Maſter our whole proceedings. If I had performed the main, and not preſented her when I came with ſome other gratuity, as a work of Supererrogation, ſhe would deride my Courtſhip, telling me, *I was an empty fellow, that I beſtowed my favours on others, and that made me ſo ſparing to her.* When ſhe thought ſhe had ſufficiently nettled me, (fearing to ſtrain my paſſion too high) did then a little comply, clapping me on the cheeks, (and clapt me ſomewhere elſe too after) calling me, Smock-fac'd Rogue; come hither Sirrah, I know what you would have, I'le ſave your longing. Such ſweetned words ſoon over-powered my ſourneſs; and notwithſtanding my

my intended hardneſs, I could not forbear melting in her Arms. We durſt not take much time in dalliance, my duty calling me home; but I regarded not that ſo much as to preſerve my Maſters good opinion of me. Mine, and my Females extravagancies, made me invent as many ways to cheat, as we had ways to ſpend what was this way gotten. If I heard any friend ſay, they muſt buy a Gown, I had my Mercer ready for that purpoſe; if a Suit and Cloak, my Draper, and the like: Sometimes telling my friend, that I was acquainted with one, that would ſell me a far cheaper pennyworth than any one elſe; other times, that ſuch an one owed me ſome moneys, and that this way I could both pleaſure my friend, and hedge in mine own moneys. Though I drove a great trade this way, receiving ſtill ready caſh, yet this would not do alone. As an aſſiſtance I guelded the money-box every day, receiving my part firſt, before my Maſter ſhould take his, which uſually he did every night, putting it into his Till. I could not ſleep, for thinking how I might be intimately acquainted with the inwards of this ſame Till. Several projects I made tryal of, but none ſuited my purpoſe ſo well, as a Barbers pair of Curling-irons. I got a File from a Smith, and to work I went with my Curling-irons, filing them to ſlip in eaſily, and ſo turn round. The firſt Eſſay I made thereof, had like to have put me into an Extaſie for joy. I laid them upon their edge, opened them wide, I pinched the money below; holding faſt, I turned them on their ſide, and ſo drew up the money to the mouth of the Scooth: now, becauſe there was many times ſo much, that it would not come through, with a knife I would ſlide away

away piece after piece, till I had fitted the money to the narrowneſs of the paſſage. I ſeldom brought up at a time leſs than three ſhillings, a good draught, not ceaſing till I had gotten twenty or thirty ſhillings at a time, or more, according to the quantity of the ſtock. Finding my Engine act according to my deſires, I could not be content without congratulating my ſucceſs. My Maſter was ſeldom at home, wherefore I askt my Miſtreſs to go out for an hour, promiſing her not ſtay beyond my limited time: She conſented, and I overjoyed, pickt up a Rambler or two, and away we went to honeſt *Ralph*. Being glad to ſee us, planted us in a convenient room fit for his purpoſe. There was never a Pint he ſcored at the Bar, but he had a Quart-Bottle in his Breeches for it. They all wondred to ſee me ſo frollick, but I thought it wiſdom to conceal the depth of my practice from them.

After we had drank very ſmartly, & came home, tranſgreſſing but a little beyond my time. My Miſtreſs was very well pleaſed, telling me, *I ſhould have leave another time, ſince I was ſo punctual.* Thoſe Bottles of Sack we drank, ran perpetually in my minde; for it was the very flower of Wine. In the commemoration of my Friends courteſie, and the goodneſs of that Liquor, I gave my contemplative fancy leave to characteriſe a Bottle of Canary, thus.

THE

THE CHARACTER OF

A Bottle of *Canary*.

HE is Gentleman I assure you well extracted, which once lived like a Salamander in the midst of the flames, and had he not been burnt, he had never proved sound. He seems a Prodigy: For that which we live by, decays him; hating Air, as *Bacchus* hates small Beer. He will lie still if you smother him, and is never so well, as when his breath is stopt. Bury him, and you make him quicker. As for his habit, it is ever plain, yet neat: Though Nobly born, he scorns not to wear a Green Coat, with a badgeon it; and you cannot injure him worse than to pick a hole in his Coat: Though he wears for the most part one sort of Garb, yet he is never out of fashion, acceptable to the best of company, not regarding his outward dress, but valuing his inward worth: However, his Suit is made of admirable Stuff, for his outside never grows barer, and his Linings are the fresher for wearing. So choice he is in his Cloathing, that he rather chuseth to have his brains knockt out, then to have a rent in his Garment. He wears an *a la mode* Hat, as light (and almost as little) as a Shittle-cock, which he puts off to none; but like the Quaker when brought be-

before a Magiſtrate, hath it taken off for him.

As for his Pedegree, I know not how to derive it; for he hath had in him, the beſt and pureſt of the *French* Blood, but will now acknowledge his race onely from the *Spaniard*, whom he imitates, being ſtately, and ſtanding always upright; treads for the moſt part on Carpets, and never ſtirs abroad but when he is carried; yet full of activity. If he runs faſt and long, the more wind he gets. If he chance to fall, which is ſeldom, for many looks to him; he will be extreamly moved, yet (contrary to all men) the fuller his belly is, the leſs hurt he receives. His credit is large, never paying for what he wears, running on the ſcore perpetually; his conditions are a riddle; there is in him pure vertue, and notorious vice; the quinteſcence of love, and the venome of hatred. He is the beginning and the end of a thouſand quarrels in an year. Yet a very Coward, for he ſuffers any to take him by the ear, and never broke any ones pate, but when conpany was by. He is very facetious in ſociety, and will ſpend himſelf freely to the laſt drop, if a Ladies ſoft and worm hand will raiſe him. He is a brisk Spark, and therefore Courtiers adore him; he is ſmooth in his expreſſion, and therefore Ladies delights in him; he is fill'd with nimble fancies, therefore the Wits frequent him, exhauſting his radical moyſture to diſtil it into Poetical Raptures; for conceits never run faſter from the Limbick of their brain, then when this Gentleman adds fewel to the Furnace: he whets wit, yet dulls it; creates new fancies, and ſtupifies. Gives the Orator a fluent tongue, and mutes him ſpeechleſs: gives a Poet

feet

feet till he cannot go. And as he helps Miniſters to preach, ſo he likewiſe ſilenceth more than the Biſhops. He hath a great many tricks in him: He will make a Faulkner flye high within doors: Make a Huntſman catch a Fox by the fire ſide. Whatever he holds, is made good; and unleſs you mind him well, much good matter that falls from him, may be loſt: for he is often fluent beyond meaſure. All Tongues court him; and thoſe that look narrowly unto him, ſhall find him no dry Fellow. The truth is, he is too profound for ſhallow brains to meddle with him: He will pour out quaint expreſſions and hard words ſo thick, that the beſt Scholars are glad at laſt to give him ſomething to ſtop his mouth: Yet hold him up fairly, and you may get all he hath out of him. He is exceſſively beloved, and reliſhes all Company, being pleaſant, and full of admirable humours. He is inwardly acquainted with the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and incorporateth with their Wives daily. His Kiſſes are ſo ſweet, that they lick their lips after him; and though his breath be ſtrong, yet it is not offenſive. He is a true *Good-Fellow*, drinking till he hath no eyes to ſee with: Good Liquor is his Life and Soul, and he is never muſty but for want of it. He will drink till he be filled up to the very throat, and gape whileſt others put it in. He will bear as much Sack as any man in *England* of his bulk; yet he will be ſoon drunk in Company. But if you will give him leave to vomit, he will take his Liquor and drink freſh, till all the Company be forced to leave him. Drinking is his hourly exerciſe, ſeldome lying out of a Tavern. He is the main Upholder of Club-meetings, without fear of being

broke. He picks mens pockets, yet is never made more reckoning of than by ſuch perſons. As for his Eſtate, I can onely ſay this, That all he hath he carries about him; yet generally he is reputed rich: What he hath, he holds upon courteſie; but what he gives others, is held *in Capite*. What he poſſeſſeth, is commonly upon Sale; yet more for plenty, than for want; and if you can purchaſe him, you purchaſe all.

I could never indure Idleneſs, I was ever in action; I thought it better *male agere quam nihil agere*, my brains or hands were continually working. By this time our Maid found her ſelf with child; which news had like to have deprived me of my underſtanding: but knowing that Vexation never remedies but rather adds to trouble, I was reſolved to bear it patiently and ſtudy ſome means to preſerve her and my Credit. I framed a Letter as from her Father, deſiring her to come down into the Country ſpeedily, if ſhe intended to ſee him alive; and according as we had laid the Plot, ſhe ſhews it her Miſtreſs, deſiring her leave to ſhew her duty to her dying Father. Our Miſtreſs moſt willingly conſented thereunto, as knowing that there was more than ordinary love between us; the maid had ſtaid as long as poſſibly ſhe might without diſcovery, Lacing her ſelf very ſtreight, and keeping down her belly with three Busks: but now ſhe made haſte to rub off: I had provided a Midwife that ſhould be her Bawd too: but this could not be done without extraordinary coſt. After her Delivery, I found the keeping of her and the Childe very expenſive: then did I begin to conſider what a vaſt

vaſt charge, and how many various troubles this momentary lecherous pleaſure draws upon a man: how furiouſly he is upon the onſet, and how quickly ſatisfied, loathing that Object he a little before longed for. Well I bethought my ſelf how to be rid both of Cow and Calf. I told her I would get together what moneys I could, and ſo marry her, upon this condition ſhe would be willing to travel with me whither I went, which I knew was her onely deſire: I informed her of my intention to go for *Virginia*; and the reaſons that induced me thereunto.

Firſt, her diſgrace would not be known there: Next, my Maſter could have no power over me; inſiſting further on the pleaſantneſs of that Continent, and the plenty of every thing, *&c.*

She aſſented to all I propounded, relying her ſelf ſolely on me to diſpoſe of her as I pleaſed. To palliate my deſign, I went with her to *Graveſend*, pretending as if I was then going with her, for no other end but to clear my ſelf from her there, knowing that after ſhe had paſt that examination, or ſearch, ſhe would meet with no more. Being aboard, I ſuddenly ſeemed to have forgot ſomething aſhore; whereupon I told her I would return to her inſtantly. I got into the Boat, and immediately after the Ship weighed her Anchor, ſhe was inſtantly under Sail, I confeſs notwithſtanding the Devil had at that time the total poſſeſſion of me; yet I was much troubled at what I had done ſo hardheartedly and cruelly. A flood of tears had ſo overwhelmed my ſight, that I could not diſcern the Ship in which ſhe was: ſo ſenſible I was of the wickedneſs of this Fact, that *Dido* like, I could have thrown my ſelf into the Sea

after her, had not a good Woman, whose Husband was in the same Ship, prevented me. Observing my tears, *'Tis probable, Young Man*, (said she) *you have lately taken your leave of some dearly beloved Friend; and I guess, by your earnest looking after yond Ship under sail, the person was in her.* I told her it was truth. *My Husband is in the same Vessel* (said she) *and therefore I have as much cause to grieve as you. Come, be of good comfort, Man, Friends must part; and it is better to part here than at the Gallows. Go along with me, and we will wash down sorrow; and with a Glass of neat Canary, antidote our hearts against any thing that may disturb them.*

With that I lookt intentively in her face, and found it correspondent with a jolly temper. An Eye black and piercing; and Eye brow black also, and each as big as a mans thumb comparatively: a signe that never fayls to denote that Woman capable of giving a man the greatest delectation in Copulation. She was every way compleatly handsome, and suitable to the desires of the most curious Critick in Love-affairs. I thought it a shame to deny so kind a proffer, and a crime in Youth unpardonable not to imbrace that opportunity, that shall lead him by the hand into *Venus* her Bed-chamber. With that I addrest my self to her, (and afterwards undrest together) declaring that the force of her Rhetorick, assisted by her external, beautiful, and altogether lovely form, had forced me to become her Proselyte, her absolutely devoted convert, and would prostrate my will to be guided by hers and her command. With that we concluded to solace our selves at the next Tavern. I applyed my self to my old way of insinuation: which soon melted her,

so

ſo that I ſaw I might when I pleaſed ſtamp loves impreſſion on her.

There was not any thing wanting that might pleaſe our ſenſes. Fearing leſt that Oven I had heated might cool, I made ready my Batch: for ſuch things are *Soon cold, ſoon hot.* Delays in love-affairs are dangerous: Women love not to be too long Tantalized; there is a certain critical time to know their inclination; which if you punctually obſerve, you ſhall aſſuredly reap the fruits of your deſires; if not, you may perpetually wait, but never enjoy the like opportunity. Wherefore the Iron glowing hot, I thought good to ſtrike, giving her a taſte for liking: being not ſatisfied, I was forc'd to ſtay her ſtomack till Supper. Men after ſuch enjoyments are commonly ſtupified, dull, heavy, melancholy or ſleepy: whereas ſhe on the contrary was nothing but Air, agil, pleaſant, nimble, and full of action. I cannot much wonder at it: for you know the Wheels of a Jack never move more merrily, then when they have been well oyled. To enliven my ſpirits, ſhe ſent for a noiſe of Muſick, ordering them to play in the next Room, becauſe they ſhould not be eye-witneſſes of our dalliances: we could not but now and then bear a part with them, our Prick-ſong keeping time with their Inſtrumental Harmony. Having ſatiated all our Senſes, we began to think of ſome repoſe, agreeing before to lie in two Chambers contiguous to each other; which were accordingly provided. As ſoon as I thought all the Houſhold were in bed, I repaired to my miſtreſs, who eagerly expected my coming; approaching the Bed-ſide, ſhe claſp'd me in her arms ſo ſtrongly, that I thought ſhe would have

ſqueezed the very marrow out of my bones. Little ſleep we enjoyed that night, ſhe not ſuffering me to reſt: As ſoon as day broke, I aroſe, beſpeaking a fat Capon ſwaddled with Saſſages, and a Quart of Butter'd Sack, which might repair decayed ſtrength, I got all ready by the time of her riſing, applauding my induſtrie and care of her, we fell to it, interlining every bit with a Glaſs of Canary. She told me ſhe would never part whilſt ſhe had a penny left, having about her ſome Thirty Pieces of Gold. *Well* (ſaid I) *my Dear, ſince it is thy reſolution, a match; but let me be Steward:* Which ſhe agreed unto, delivering into my hands what Gold ſhe had. For two or three hours I ſhewed my ſelf very officious in my place; but conſidering that when this money was ſpent, we ſhould not know what to do, I thought it was better for one to want than two; beſides, I had lately ſurfeited on a Medler, and therefore my ſtomack nauſeated the very thoughts thereof. I had feed the Drawer to bring me word juſt as the *Graveſend* Barge was going off; which accordingly he did by a private ſign concluded betwixt us. I had juſt ſo much time below to write her theſe lines inſtead of a ſolemn leave taking, leaving them with the Drawer to preſent her, and ſo went aboard.

Madam,

By this you'll hear I'm gone and wonder much
That I ſhould go, not taking t'other touch:
Inverted 'tis all one; for hence you know
When we both met, it was but touch and go.
I was ſo fierce at firſt, I ſoon was ſpent:
Storms and high winds are never permanent:
Yet for all this, I would have dreign'd your Fen,
Could this ſame work have been perform'd by men.

I

I fainting in the enterprize, gave out:
Your Gold will fit me for another bout.
Hence be more wise; your fond belief doth show,
That you may lose your hidden treasure too.

Arriving at *Billings-gate*, I went straight to a Tavern, where I had an interest with the Drawer, resolving there to consult seriously with my self what course to follow, being as yet unresolved what to do. After I had raised my dulled spirits with a glass or two, I concluded to hazard my Masters good opinion, nay, and my Mistresses affection too; which though at that present it only smoaked, I might easily divine, that in process of time, it would burst forth into a flame. Being before confined to my Masters time, I began to consider what an excellent thing Liberty was, equally estimable with Health; which two, though they are the greatest and most precious gifts (next our Redemption) the Creator of the world hath bestowed on mankind; yet we poor mortals, value them not till we are sensible of their want, by being deprived of them. This is an infallible maxime, *That the deprivation of a thing shall be so much the more evil, as the possession thereof is good.* Now if Liberty be such an excellent and delectable thing when enjoyed, how miserable are those that want it?

Having moneys in my Pocket, I concluded to experiment the enjoyment thereof, and to participate of such delights the nature of young men is most inclinable to. Now man being a sociable Creature, I thought I should reap but little satisfaction to my self in the expence of my moneys, without an Associate: Wherefore I sent to an Apprentice of my in-

timate acquaintance contemporary with me, and who had often prompted me to ramble with him. This Lad was his Masters Cashier, which I knew would much assist my design. I made him acquainted with my intention of trying the world: Though it had been formerly his own motion, yet he seemed at the first something startled; but all his doubts I resolved; adding moreover, That to have our wills inslaved to other mens, was a thing insupportable, since that we were as well as they, created free Denizens of this world. I had no great occasion to make use of many Arguments to this purpose; for his own inclination was sufficient to perswade him. The result of our discourse was a firm resolution to become two Knights-errant. I advised him forthwith to go home, and bring with him what Cash he had in his possession; which he readily performed, and indeed more than I could expect, being 200 *l.* the Fates having so decreed to favour this our first bold exploit, as tryal of what we durst attempt.

CHAP. X.

How he frequented Bawdy-houſes; what exploits he committed in them; the Character of a Bawd, a Whore, a Pimp, and a Trapan; their manner of living; with a Detection of their wicked lives and Converſations.

BEing full Fraught with money, we undertook our Progreſs, promiſing to our ſelves all delight imaginable, but not conſidering what the effect would be. We frequented all places of pleaſure, but among the chief, we ranked *Brothel-houſes*, which were our Repoſitories. We ſeldom were ſeen in the Streets by day, for fear of diſcovery; confining our ſelves cloſe Priſoners to ſome *Bubling-houſe*; at night (like ſuch as cloſely delighted in deeds of darkneſs) we would ſometimes flutter abroad. Our paſtime was to hire Coaches to any pretended place, and when we came near it, to make our eſcape. One time leaping out of the Boot, my Cloak chanced to tangle in the ſpokes of the Wheel, which turning ſo, drew it in; that for this fact, I had like to have been executed on the Wheel, had I not ſpeedily unbuttoned my Cloak: I was loath to bid the Coach-man ſtop, thinking I ſhould have it at laſt, I ran Lacquy-like a long way, but all my

my endeavors to ſhift it, proved ineffectual; ſo that at length I was forced to cry out, *Hold Coachman*. The Coach-man coming out of his Box, ſoon perceived the fallacy, and ſtraightways demanded his money, before he would untangle my Cloak, which I was compelled to give him. Delivering me my Cloak, he told me, *I had paid him, but he had not paid me for my attendance on him*: And ſaid moreover, *That my Cloak would not look like a Livery, unleſs it were laced; and with that, with his whip, laſhed me well favouredly.* Another ſort of Paſtime we uſed, was to kick the old Watchmens Lanthorns about the ſtreet; but we had worſe ſucceſs with this than the former. Aſſoon as we had done this manful act, we betook our ſelves to flight, ſtill eſcaping, till one time we miſtook a young, luſty, nimble fellow, for an old, decrepit, dim-lighted old man, ſerving him as we had done the reſt; but he was a little too quick footed; overtaking us, ſurprized us; and as he was carrying us before the Conſtable, we met with the Grand Round, who, without much examination, committed us as Rats to the Counter. The chiefeſt thing that troubled us, was the apprehenſion of our Maſters knowing where we were. But we reſolved to drown'd that care; we had not been there long, before other Rats, Male and Female, were brought in to bear us company. Some of the men were all bloody, and their Mobs Scarfs and Hoods all rent, and none of them ſober: Damming and Sinking were the conſtant flouriſhes of their diſcourſe; calling for drink was the Argument they held, and roaring in diſconſonate notes was their Harmony. Though I my ſelf was comparatively wicked, yet I bleſſed my God I had not arrived

rived to that height these superlative Villains had attained to. Being in their company, I thought my self in the Suburbs, or on the confines of Hell. Sin, if it be dressed up in specious pretences, may be entertained as a companion; but when it appears in its own shape, it cannot but strike horror into the Soul of any, though desparate, if not stupified. Look upon a Prison as in it self, and it may be fitly termed a temporary Hell. For as the other is a receptacle for damned Souls, the Gates thereof standing alwayes wide open; so this refuseth the reception of none, though never so wicked a miscreant. Though my durance in this place was but short, yet I could not but take some observations, imploying from thence the faculties of my Soul, to draw up the definition of a Prison. Hell is a very proper denomination for it, since it is a place composed of nothing but disorder and confusion; a Land of darkness, inhabited by calamity, horror, misery, and confusion; a bottomless Pit of fraud, violence, and stench. A Prison is the Banishment of Courtesie, the Centre of Infamy and Disparagement, the Destruction of good Wits, the Treasure of Despair, the Fining-Pot of Friendship, a Den of Deceivers, a Forrest of Ravenous Beasts. Here you may see one Weeping, another Singing; one Sleeping, another Swearing; every one variously imployed; one Eating in a corner, and another Pissing just by him; another Lowsing himself between both; it may be heretofore a Military man, and therefore loath to forget his Art, but rather exercising it in the killing of his bodily Enemies, bearing the blood on his nail, as the Trophies of his Victory. My stay was here so short, that I cannot

not insist upon particulars, referring you to its more ample description in another place. The next day paying our Fees, and receiving some checks, with good admonitions from the Justice, we were discharged. This misfortune made us not a jot more cautious, but assoon as we were at liberty, we went upon the sent to Mother *Cr--*formerly famous for the Citizens wives that frequented her house; and still rides Admiral of all the rest of her Function about the Town. The truth of it is, of all the Bawds I know, she merits most, having an house fit for the accommodation of the best: As for her walking Utensils, they are composed of refined mettal, always neatly kept; which, because they are not used upon all slight occasions, they appear the more delectable to the eye. Assoon as we had entered the door, I could hear a ruffling of Silks in sundry places: I conceive it was their policy, by seeming modesty, to set a greater edge on our appetites. We were conducted into a large handsome Room, bottles of Wine were brought up, both Spanish and French, with Salt meats to relish the Pallate, though we gave no order for them: But, it seems, it was the custom of the house, a chargeable one, but without a piece spending, you shall know little of their practices. At length, up came the old Matron, after the performance of our Devoir, she seats her self by me, and began to be impudently acquainted, chucking me under the chin, calling me her *Son Smock-face*. Having well warmed our selves with Wine, knowing that our bloods began to heat. *Well*, said she, *I guess at the intent of your coming hither, neither shall you go away unsatisfied. Nature will have its course, and if in Youth it be stopt, it will*

but,

but, Torrent-like, flow with the greater impetuosity. Come, I see by your countenances, that ye were born sons of mirth and pleasure, shew then what stock ye came of: If you want Subjects to exercise your parts on, we'll have more Wine; and when ye are inflamed, ye shall have the benefit of a Cooler. With that she leaves us; but another of the same Sex, though three degrees different in age, supplied her place. At first view I seemed very well pleased; handsome she was, and very proportionable, but withal so impudent, that I was antidoted against lechery. *Ista femina qua limites vericundiæ semel excesserit, opportet illam esse graviter impudentem.* If once a woman pass the bounds of Shamefac'dness, she will seldom stop till she hath arrived to the heighth of Impudence. I must needs deal ingeniously, the Needle of my Microcosm was toucht by Loves Loadstone, and pointed directly to its proper centre: but her over-much willingness to prostitute her self to my desires, made too large a variation in the Magnet. Laying aside Metaphors drawn from terms of Art, if I might have had an hundred pounds I could not cause an erection. She did spit in her hand to make it moist, having been drawn dry, the Pole being never out of the Well; and when she kist me, it was open-mouth'd, interposing her tongue, which proclaimed her an ancient Practitioner. I found her body the very Tilted Lees of Pleasure; taste her, she is dead, and falls upon the Pallate. Though she had baited her desires with a million of prostitute countenances and enticements, yet I lookt upon her rather a Companion for an Hospital, and stood rather in need of a Chyrurgeons acquaintance than mine. My Friend had nibbled at the bait; but when I heard them capitulating

pitulating about the price of her Commodity, I thought ſhe wanted a Fee for the Doctor. Well, had ſhe not over-traded, ſhe had not broke ſo ſoon, for her trade is oppoſite to all others: For ſhe did ſet up without credit, and her too much cuſtome undid her; and ſo let her go, without either ſhame or hope of repentance.

We deſired to ſee another: 'Tis variety that Man cheifly takes delight in: One conſtant ſort of Food, without participating of any other, though Manna, will cauſe the ſtomack to long for the Fleſh-pots: Neither can the crime be greater in the enjoyment of divers perſons, than one alone, provided Matrimony make not the Act Legitimate: For illuſtration thereof, take theſe lines.

Born under ſome ill Planet, or accurſt,
Is he that loves one ſingle Whore:
Who with one draught can always quench his thirſt,
Ty'd to one Miſtreſs, and no more.

To Swive a thouſand Whores makes no more crimes,
Then't doth to Swive one Whore a thouſand times.

This nauſeating thing being removed, up came one of *Venus* her chief Darlings, excellent Fleſh! and ſhe her ſelf the Cook that dreſt it, ſpending moſt of her day time about it, that ſhe might with the better appetite be taſted at night. Finding no exceptions in this, I was impatient till I had conſummated my deſires, withdrawing into another room. To heighten my thoughts, ſhe declared to me her Birth and Education; that as the one was well extracted,

tracted, the other had occasioned much cost and expence. She further insisted, that it was not usual for her to admit of any to her embraces, but such whose long acquaintance had gained her affection. I offered her a Crown, which she refused with indignation, telling me, That she was not yet reduced to so low a condition, as to become so poor a Mercenary Prostitute. At last, with much perswasion, I fastned on her an half Piece, and so striving with her (she onely seeming averse) I accomplisht my ends. I had not fully performed my work, but in came a fellow, whose very face would have enlightned the room, though in the darkest night: For indeed it appeared to me a Blazing Comet, and his Nose (for miraculously he had preserved it) was the brushy Tayl. Laying his hand on his Sword, he looked fiercer than a *Spanish Don* insulting over an *Indian Slave*. The bulk of his Body began to heave like an Earthquake, whilest his mouth, *Etna*-like, belcht out all manner of sulphurous Oaths, which roared so loud, as if his belly had contained a barrel of Gun-powder, and the Linstock of his Nose had fired it. His courteous Salutation to me, was, *How darest thou, Son of a Whore, presume in this nature to dishonor me, in the abusing of my wife, without the expectation of an immediate annihilation or dissipation into Atomes? But I have something here shall tame thy insolence, and now I am resolved to set thy Blood abroach.* With that he seemed to make a Pass at me: Now I, imagining that he really intended to do what he pretended, for the safe-guard of my life, I took up a Joynt-stool, and received his point in the seat, and following it home, tumbled him down the stairs, and not being

being able to recover my ſelf, fell with him. My Comerade came running down at the noiſe to aſſiſt me, but he ſeeing me rather make uſe of my heels than hands, followed my example, and ſo built a Scodce, leaving the old Bawd to condole her great loſs, for her Reckoning was very conſiderable.

Now becauſe I have often met with theſe *Hectors* or *Trapanning Villains*, I think it will not be unſuitable to this preſent Diſcourſe, to inſert their Character.

THE CHARACTER OF AN *Hector*, or *Trapan*.

A Bawdy-houſe is his Cloyſter, where he conſtantly ſays his Mattins. He is an Whores Protector, pretending himſelf more valiant than any of the ancient *Heroes*, thereby thinking to take off the ſuſpicion of a Coward from himſelf: For the opinion of Valor is a good protection to thoſe that dare not uſe it. His frequent drawing his Sword upon any flight occaſion, makes the ignorant ſuppoſe him Valiant, whereas he durſt not do it, but when he is confident no danger will enſue thereon. He never ſtrikes any, but ſuch he is ſure will not return his blows. In company he is wonderful exceptious and cholerick, thinking in the fray ſome booty

booty may be obtained: but his wrath never swells higher than when men are loth to give him any occasion; but the onely way to pacifie him, is to beat him soundly. The hotter you grow, the milder he is, protesting he always honoured you. The more you abuse him, the more he seems to love you: if he chance to be quarrelsome, you may threaten him into a quiet temper. Every man is his Master that dares beat him, and every one dares that knows him; and he that dares do this, is the onely man can do much with him. Yet if he knows a Coward, he will purposely fall out with him, to get Courtesies from him, and so be bribed into a reconcilement. Yet I cannot say but that he may fight, (if with great advantage) being so accustomed to the sight of drawn Swords, which probably may infuse something of a conceit into him; which he so magnifies by his own good opinion, that he would have people believe that the Mole-hill of his Prowess is no less than a Mountain. This little he hath, he is no Niggard in displaying, resembling some Apothecaries Shops, full of Pots, though little contained in them. His Estate lies in Contrivances; and though other Landlords have but four Quarter-days, he hath three hundred sixty and odd to recieve the fruits of his Stratagems. He is well skill'd in Cards and Dice, which help him to cheat young Gulls newly come to Town; and the reason he usually gives for it, is, *A Woodcock must be pluckt ere he be dresst.* If that will not do, he carries him to one of his Mistresses, and so both join to plume this Fowl: if there be not ready money to answer expectation, a Bond of considerable value shall serve turn, attested by two shall swear any thing for half

a Crown. No man puts his brain to more uſe than he; for his life is a daily invention, and each meal a meer ſtratagem. He hath an excellent memory for his acquaintance; if there ever paſt but an *How do you*? between him and another it ſhall ſerve ſeven years hence for an embrace, and that for money. Out of his abundance of joy to ſee you, offers a pottle of Wine; and in requital of his kindneſs, can do no leſs than make you pay for it: whileſt you are drawing money, he fumbles in his pockets, (as School-boys with their points, being about to be whipt) till the Reckoning be paid, and ſays *It muſt not be ſo*, yet is eaſily perſwaded to it; and then cries *Gentlemen, you force me to incivillity*. When his whores cannot ſupply him, he borrows of any that will lend him ought; of this man a ſhilling, and of another as much; which ſome lend him, not out of hope to be repayed, but that he will never trouble them again. If he finds a good look from any, he will haunt him ſo long, till he force a good nature to the neceſſity of a quarrel. He loves his Friend as one doth his Cloak, that hath but one, and knows not how to get another; he will be ſure to wear him thread-bear ere he forſake him. Men ſhun him as faſt as infection; nay, his old Companions, his Cloaths that have hung upon him ſo long, at length fall off too. His prayer in a morning is, That his Cheats may take effect that day; if not, that he may be drunk before night. He ſleeps with a Tobacco pipe in his mouth, and he dreams of nothing but Villany. If any miſchief eſcapes him, it was not his fault, for he lay as fair for it as he could. He dares not enter into a ſerious thought leſt he hang himſelf; but if ſuch melancholy ſeize him,

the

the Drink is his refuge, and Drunkenneſs cures him. Laſtly he commonly dies like a Malefactour on the Gallows, or like *Hercules* with fire in his bones. When hanged, if begged for an Anatomy, it would ſerve to convert Tobacco-ſmokers from delighting in the exceſs thereof: for they will find the funnel of his body, I mean his throat, furred and choakt up.

Being freed from danger, we rejoiced exceedingly that we thus ſo narrowly eſcaped, reſolving to houſe our ſelves in the next Bubbing-place we came to, that we might talk freely of this rencounter. Coming into the Kitchin, I was not a little amazed at the ſight of a thing ſitting in a Chair by the fire-ſide, with a Pipe of Tobacco in its mouth, and a Quarter of Strong-Waters by its ſide. This Tun of Fleſh reſembled an Elephant for the bigneſſe of her Waſte, had there been the leaſt appearance of a Tooth: A Noſe ſhe had (which with all wonder be it ſpoken ſo long, as that it was a fit reſemblance of the Elephants Proboſcis or Trunk. But as I ſaid before, her Teeth were ſaln out; and as loving Neighbours to reconcile them, her Chin and Noſe reſolved to meet about it. She bids us Welcome as well as ſhe could ſpeak. Go, I think ſhe could not; but opening her mouth, Lord, what ſtrong imaginations my fancy ſuggeſted to me! Me thought I ſaw Hell gaping to devour me; and within that bottomleſs Concave, I could diſcern infinite numbers of Souls whoſe damnation ſhe was acceſſary to; and coming ſomewhat too near her, I imagined her breath was bitumenous and ſmelt of Brimſtone. She might fitly be compared to an old Coal that hath been well

burnt, that with the leaſt ſpark will rekindle and fire any thing near it. But her fitteſt likeneſs is the Devil, her Envy running paralel with his. All that the Devil endeavours is to bring Mankind into the ſame ſtate, and a Bawds crime is to make all fair women like her: now becauſe their youth perhaps will not admit of it ſo ſoon, ſhe hurries them on to it by degrees. I lookt about her houſe very inquiſitively, but I could not judge her Moveables (ſetting aſide her quick Cattel) to be worth an Inventory. Her bedding I doubt me too is infectious, few coming neer it but they are preſently taken with a fit of the falling-ſickneſs. This old Beldame, being loth to put her throat to the trouble of calling her white Devils about her, had got a Whiſtle, on which ſhe uſed ſeveral Notes, which Muſical language her Girls underſtood very well. We called for drink; the old Bawd replyed ſhe would ſend for ſome, though ſhe had it not in the houſe: this was to be ſure of our Moneys. Herein I obſerved their temperance, not ſuffering us to have too much meaſure. Wenches we had plentifully, one more eſpecially I took notice of, to have the Swarthieſt skin I have ſeen Engliſh born, on whom an ordinary fellow was very ſweet. When I ſaw my opportunity, I askt him, (craving his excuſe) *What Trade he was?* Pat as I would have it, he anſwered me. *That he was a Tanner. I concluded ſo, Sir*, (ſaid I) *by your dreſſing of that Calves-skin there.* This Dull-headed fool apprehended me not, but began to be angry, telling me, *His Trade was a good Trade, and I need not undervalue it*: I told him, *I did not, ſince there was ſome analogy between my Trade and his. Why what trade are you?* (ſaid he,) (*I may ask you a queſtion as well as*

you me.) I replyed, *That I was Cuckold-maker. How can that be like my Profession?* quoth he. *In this*, said I, *You dress the Skins, and I trim the Horns.* The Bawd at this fell into such an extream fit of laughter, that down fell her Pipe, and up came the Strong-waters that she had swallowed; that was not all, but having not her retentive faculty, she let flie: surely she was overcharged, which made her recoyl, and so blew out her breech-pin. She was forced to leave us, and about an hour after returned: how sweet I cannot tell you. We fell into discourse again: I askt her, *How long she had liv'd in this house? Two years*, (said she) *a longer time than any house I have lived in this twenty years:* with that I concluded she was in fee with the Justices Clerk. My stomach being watterish, I would needs have some Eggs and Bacon: but Lord, what an Agony the hearing thereof put the Bawd in! desiring me to desist, for she should die at the sight of them. I askt her the reason: *O*, said she, *it puts me in mind of one* Shrove-tuesday *especially, on which the Apprentices pulled down my house; and sick, sick as I was, pulled me away violently from a Caudle I had prepared to comfort me: But they gave me one with a Pox to them, and the Devils Dam take the rotten Eggs in it, with which I thought they would have pelted out my brains, after they had dragged me sufficiently, and worried me (as a Mastiff would a Cat) till they were weary of the sport, fearing I should catch cold, they out of pity covered me warm in a Bogg-house. But the worst was, after this kinde usage, I was to go through a long street before I could come to an acquaintanee of mine wherein I could safely secure my self from the out-rage of these Hell-hounds. All along as I went, a thousand Dogs bark at me, the street was*

filled with people looking and laughing at my ſad diſaſter, but none daring to come near me. They ſay I left ſo ſtrong a ſcent behind me, that ſeveral of the Inhabitants left their dwellings upon it, and that the ſtrong ſavour remained in that place above ſix days. I ſeemed to pitty her much, promiſing to viſit her often; and ſo we left her.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

What a Trick he ſerved his Comrade; how himſelf was Trapan'd; his own Cloaths taken from him; the Bawd out of pretended pity, inveſted him with an old peticoat and waſtcoat; his admittance into a Boarding-School; his getting many of the Gentlewomen with Childe; his diſcovery, and his flight.

FRom one bawdy houſe to another, was our dayly Travel, ſtill finding out ſome variety that might pleaſe us. About the twylight, coming along by the well built houſe, I ſaw a Gentlewoman richly Attired ſtanding at the door, who, as I paſſed by, very civily ſaluted me, and ſo withdrew her ſelf; I followed her in, as very well underſtanding the interpretation of ſuch actions. She brought us into a ſpacious Inner-room, and then with much civility and good carrage, invited us to ſit down. She called to her ſervant to bring ſome bottles of Wine, reſolving to make us pay dearly for her extraordinary Favours. By our habits ſhe took us for no leſs than perſons of Quality; for we had gallantly accoutred our ſelves; and I thought that Fortune now had deſigned me her chiefeſt Favorite, in throwing this unexpected bleſſing upon me. She cauſed her Lute to be brought her, to which ſhe ſung ſo harmonical, that the Muſick of the Spheres are

no more to be compared to it, than a Scotch Bagpipe to an Organ. This so intoxicated my Comerade, with the Wine together (not but that they had a great operation on my self) that he fell fast asleep, (*alias* dread drunk.) Glad I was to my very heart of this accident, fearing he might be a Rival in my intention: and to the intent I might remove all Remora's or Impediments that might hinder my sole enjoyment of this Lady, I consulted with my self what to do with him; I was not long about it, but streight resolved to send him home to his Master. Love to a Woman is so forceable, that what will it not do? To sum up all, make a man betray his Friend. I made my Apology to the Gentlewoman for his incivility, and requested the favor to have her servant procure me a Porter; whilest she was gone to execute my desires, I searcht his Pockets, and took away all his Gold; for we had converted all our money into that Mettal, which we always made our *vade mecum*. To ingratiate my self with this Gentlewoman, I acquainted her with my design, which she heartily laughed at. I farther desired of her, that I might have a Card and a piece of Paper. On the Card I wrote a Superscription, and pinned it on his back, directing the thing to his Master, living in such a place; with the Paper, I wrote a Letter to him to this effect.

Sir,

Lately I found your Goose upon the way,
I took him up, as one that went astray.
To recompence my pains, I pull'd his feathers,
Such precious down will warm me in all weathers.
His flesh I love not; it belongs to you:
The gibblets though I keep, and so adieu.

Then

Then giving the Porter inſtructions, that he ſhould but juſt put him within the doors and leave the Letter, and ſo with all ſpeed to come away to prevent examination; he brought me word he had performed my order: what deſcants were made hereon, I ſhall leave the Reader to imagine. By this time I had gained my miſtreſs with a ſhower of Gold, which had ſo far prevailed on her, that ſhe proteſted ſhe was wholly and ſolely at my devotion. I would have had her to have gone immediately to bed; but ſhe told me, *There would be time enough before morning to ſport in, and that we ſhould be both tired, if we went to bed ſo ſoon.* Wherefore to divert our ſelves, we drunk and ſung together in parts, I my ſelf having indifferent good judgment. Having ſpun out the time ſo long till it was time to go to bed, ſhe then conducted me to the Chamber where ſhe intended we ſhould lie. Though ſhe made what haſte ſhe could to undreſs her ſelf, yet me thought ſhe was purpoſely tedious. I commended before her Vocal and Inſtrumental Muſick, but then I eſteemed no other Muſick ſweeter than what the tag made againſt her Bodice when ſhe was unlacing her ſelf. About two a clock in the morning, three fellows ruſhed into our Room, at which I awaked, but made as little noiſe as a *Perdue*. My miſtreſs leaping out of the Bed, they ſeized on her, gagged and bound her; and then opening the two leaves of the Window that was the entrance into the Belcony, they came in all haſte to the Bed, and in a trice, had rowled up the Bed ſo cloſe, that they had like to have ſtiffled me in the middle on't, though they dragged me in the Bed from off the Bedſteed, rudely letting me fall on the ground, yet I felt no harm, every part of me was ſo well guarded,

guarded, that in that condition, I might have bid defiance to a Canon Bullet. But when I heard them talk of flinging the Bed over the Belcony to their Companions, I thought I ſhould have died inſtantly for fear, knowing I muſt of neceſſity go with it. Whereupon I cryed out as loud as could, and ſtrugling, I got a little place open, and then I roar'd like *Phalaris* his Bull. They ſeeming to be ſurprized with my unexpected noiſe, fled, faſtning a Rope to the Belcony, and ſo ſlid down into the ſtreet. Perceiving they were all gone, I groped about the Room (for it was very dark) ſpeaking very lowly, Where are you Madam? repeating it often; but much wondred I could not hear her anſwer me. As I was feeling round the Room, ſtretching forth my hands, I chanced to run one of my hands againſt her, and one of my fingers into her mouth; I thought my finger had ſtrayed at firſt miſtaking the place, but ſearching farther, I found teeth, I knew then where about I was, and diſcovered withal, a ſtick in her mouth, keeping it wide open, as Butchers do their Sheep with a Gambrel. But having removed this obſtacle, ſhe begged me to untie her hands, which having done, ſhe her ſelf untied her feet; and with that ſhe would have claſped me in her arms, but I hung an arſe, being ſenſible of the ſtinking condition that the fear had put me in. She was very inquiſitive after my welfare, asking me again and again, *Whether I had received any harm from the Rogues*, I told her no, *Nay, then I care not for my own ſufferings, or what loſs I have ſuſtained by them*, ſaid ſhe, and ſo ſpeedily went for a candle. As I was thinking to apologize for my naſtineſs, up ſhe came with a light, viewing me, and per-

perceiving what a condition I was in, she kept at a distance; *Sir*, said she, *my fancy suggests to me, that you now resemble* Nebuchadnezzar *when metamorphozed into a Beast, and lying in his own dung; when you shall have reassum'd your humanity, I shall presume to approach nearer to you.* I made my Sirreverence to her, wishing they had gagg'd her breech so wide, her guts might have a passage through her posteriors; For I plainly perceived, notwithstanding all her specious pretences, she was the foundress of this Plot. Well, she caused water to be brought up, with which I cleansed my self, and because my shirt had too strong a scent of *Stercus humanum*, she lent me a Smock, which presaged ere long I should wear Coats too. Having shifted my self, I look'd for my Cloaths, but there was a *Non est inventus* out against them; all my search could afford me not the least comfort: my Mistress seemed much disturbed at my loss; but when I told her I had loss'd such a considerable quantity of Gold, her sorrow seem'd to be redoubled, and I am sure her inward joy was increased She comforted me with a great many friendly loving expressions, desiring me to be patient, and indeed necessity forc'd me to it. I ask'd her advice what I should do in this naked condition; *There is no remedy*, (she replyed) *you must be content to cloath your self in Womans apparel, as for mans I have none to furnish you withal.* I consented to it, and presently she dress me up in one of her gowns, with all the appurtenances thereunto belonging. The slenderness of my body, whiteness of skin, beauty, and smoothness of face (having no hairs thereon) added a suitableness to my garb. I must ingeniously confess, when I consulted with a Looking-

ing-glaſs, I thought the tranſmutation of Sexes had been verified in me; but when I walked, I found ſomething pendulous. I thought it folly to tax her for my misfortune, knowing how little it would advantage me. The time was come I was to take my leave of her, going to ſalute her, I committed a foul miſtake, indeavouring to pull off my hood inſtead of my hat, and making a Leg (as the vulgar term is) inſtead of a Curchy; but ſhe adviſing me to rectifie that miſtake for the time to come, we bid each other adieu. In this diſguize I traverſed the ſtreets, it being almoſt impoſſible for any to diſcover me, my voice being ſo effeminate, that I was confident that would never betray me. Finding a Bill on a door, I knocked, deſiring to ſee what Lodgings they had; I was very civily intreated to come in, and was ſhown ſeveral Rooms with much reſpect, for my female habit was very gallant, and ſo it had need, for it coſt me dearer then ſo much cloath of Gold. I pitch'd at laſt upon a Chamber extraordinary well furniſhed, I never ſcrupled the price, (becauſe they ſhould look on me as a perſon of Quality) but agreed to my Landlords own terms. I told him I was lately come out of the Countrey, and that my Trunks were not yet arriv'd, with a great many more fictions to prevent ſuſpition. I onely took Sanctuary in this place, for no longer time than I could contrive away to diſpoſe of my ſelf. There was a young Gentleman that lay in the houſe, and took ſpecial notice of me as ſoon as I entered it, and as he told me next day, was overjoyed that I had determined to be a Lodger there. This young *Bravo* (which had more money than wit) had prepared a Banquet for me, and requeſted

the

the favour of me, that it and himſelfe might be received into my chamber, I alleadged I could not do it in point of honour, and therefore defired to be excuſed; but he preſt me ſo far (getting alſo his Landlady to intercede for him, that at laſt (though with much ſeeming unwillingneſs) I condeſcended thereunto. Very merrey they were, but I thought it prudence to be reſerv'd. My Amoriſt ſo gazed on me, that I thought he would have devoured me with his eyes, kiſſing me ſometimes, which had lik'd to have made me diſgorge my ſtomack in his face. For in my opinion, is it very unnatural, nay loathſome, for one man to kiſs another, though cuſtomary I know it is; yet I look on ſuch as uſe it, inclining to *Sodomy*. In three days time we grew ſo intimately acquainted, that at laſt he became impudent. One time as I paſt by him, he catch'd at me, endeavouring to intrude his hand where he had no intereſt, but he did it ſo rudely, that I verily thought he had ſpoyled me; I believe he imagined that he had caught me by the buſk, which ſome Ladies wear very long to hide their riſing bellies. I ſhowed my ſelf much diſpleaſed at him for ſo doing, expreſſing my reſentment in imbittered words for ſo great a Crime. Next morning, he courted me to a Reconciliation with a Gold Watch; by that he ſhould have been well skilled in gaining female affections; for there is nothing prevailes on them more than Preſents; and nothing gains ſooner over them a total conqueſt, than the hopes of enjoying a fair promiſing Fortune. With much importunity I accepted his Peace offering, conditionally, that he ſhould never attempt the like offence. Nothing troubled me more, then how to dreſs my ſelf whe-

my cloaths were off. I durſt not lay two things together, for fear I ſhould miſtake, there were ſo many baubles, I wiſhed for a Pen and Ink, to write on them what places they properly belonged to. Viewing them on the Table together, they repreſented to my thoughts Babel, or a greater confuſion, and nothing but a miracle could produce Order out of them. I had ſo improv'd my ſelf by hourly practice, when none was with me, and obſervation of others, that I had now the knack on't. I new modelled my ſteps, my former being too large by three quarters; I could advantagiouſly caſt my eye, ſet my face in a plat-form, and diſſect my words; my feet were my only Traytors, and therefore I alwayes kept them cloſe Priſoners, for their greatneſs (like the Devils cloven-foot) proclaimed me the contrary Sex I imitated. Well, I thought it high time to be gone, not without plucking my Widgeon. Having a fit opportunity, there being none preſent but himſelf and I, I pretended diſappointment of mony, and that my Rents were not yet due, and therefore deſired him to lend me 10*l.* for eight days; at the termination of which time, I ſhould not fail to return it him with gratitude. He was much joy'd, that I would favour him ſo far, as to accept his ſervice; and with that flew like Lightning, fearing he would have fractured his Leg-bone for haſte to bring me the money, which I received from him thankfully. I cauſed a Coach to be call'd, pretending I had buſineſs into the City. My Cully would have wait d on me, which I utterly refuſed, telling him without privacy my affairs would prove ineffectual; whereupon he deſiſted.

I went to a Saleſman, and bought (pretendedly for

for my Maid) an ordinary, yet handſome Petty-coat and Waſtcoat, buying all things requiſite for a Servant: caſting off my Gentlewomans Garb, I inveſted my ſelf with what I had lately bought, and in that Equipage I went to a Boarding-ſchool, (which ſhall be nameleſs) where I was received as a Menial of the Houſe. The Servants at firſt laught at me heartily to ſee how untowardly I handled the Tools of the Kitchin: Meat I ſpitted ſo ſtrangely, as that at firſt ſight they could not well name what that was before the fire. My Miſtreſs in a ſhort time taking notice of my ignorance in Kitchin-affairs, told me I was unfit for her ſervice, and therefore would diſcharge me. I was much troubled at it, deſiring her to continue me longer, ingeniouſly confeſſing that I knew nothing, being but newly come out of the Country; that I valued not Wages, provided I might learn experience; and it was for that intent I tendred my ſervice. The good old Gentlewoman was well pleaſed with my freedome, and preſently ordered the Maids, that without their uſuall giggleting, they ſhould ſhew me any thing I underſtood not. Though I lay with one of the Servant-maids, which was a well-featured Girl, and had incomparable good fleſh) yet I would not diſcover my Sex to her, (though much againſt the hair) reſolving firſt to be well acquainted in the Houſe. I went through my buſineſs pretty handily, giving a general ſatisfaction, and gaining the love of moſt of the young Gentlewomen. I now thought it high time to handle the matter for which I came about, for indeed fleſh and blood could hold out no longer. One night I perceived my Bed-fellow could not in the leaſt cloſe her eyes, continu-

ally

ally sighing and tumbling to and fro, sometimes laying her leg over me, and at other times hugging me within her arms, as if I had been in a Press. At first I thought this Commotion within her proceeded out of sympathy, as questionless in part it did: for I found experimentally by my self, that each time she laid her leg over me, I thought my heart would have forc'd its passage through my breast. I askt her what she ailed, that she was thus so restless. At first, sighs were her onely answers, till at last, (I pressing her much) poor thing, she melted into tears. As soon as the deluge thereof was somewhat abated) *Jone*, said she, (for so I call'd my self) *if thou wilt keep my secrets, I will tell thee my whole heart.* I promised to do that, having resolved on it before: whereupon she thus related her story. *Our* John *hath lov'd me a long time, and we have had many merry meetings abroad, and at home too when all were gone to bed. When he and I were alone, how he kist me, and clipt me! and would have gone farther, but I would not let him: I told him he might at last if he would marry me; telling him moreover, that unless he did so, he should never have his ends of me as long as he had a day to breath. Upon this we parted: I was about to have called him back, had it not been for shame, and ever since he will hardly speak to me, seeming very strange and indifferent. Now my dear* Jone, *I le tell thee, I cannot hold out longer, wherefore, to morrow night, I'le give him an opportunity, and if he makes the least motion, I will entertain it.* I dissuaded her from this rash resolution as much as possibly I could, telling her the danger that might ensue, as her being gotten with Childe, and the shame that accompanies it; hindering her preferment; besides, who would be so mad

mad to marry a Whore? &c What ever I alleadged, she valued not. Seeing she was full bent, I thought this the critical hour to order and qualifie her hot distemper. *Come, come*, (said I) *I will quickly put you out of conceit with* John, *and cure this love that so much troubles you*; and with that I mounted, she thought I was going to shew some wanton gambles, which some wanton Girls use, and therefore freely received me. But finding her mistake, and something else she expected not from me, it was pretty to observe what a fine amorous Combate there was between Willingness and Unwillingness.

I thought she would dissolve ere she would stire:
Thus Venus *came of Froth, and Froth of her.*
Indeeds must look too; it to me appear'd
Like Mouth that spilt its Posset on its Beard.

Soon after a retreat was sounded to take a little breath, (for the charge was very hot) and so we parled. She could hardly believe all this while that I was a Man, though she had try'd the effect: But before morning I satisfied her fully in that particular. I enjoyn'd her silence; which I thought she would have done for her own interest sake; which she did for a while. I came at length to be very much beloved in general. It was the custome almost every night for the young Gentleweman to run skittishly up and down into one anothers Chambers; and I was so pestered with them, that they would not let me sleep. But I had an excellent Guardian in bed with me, that would not let any of them come in to us, resolving to monopolize all the sport to her self. It was good sport to observe

how this Maid always followed me as my ſhadow, and whatever I was doing of, ſhe would have a hand in it with me. What an endleſs work we made in making the beds! Our Miſtreſs ſaw her work very much neglected, laying all the blame upon my bed-fellow; and indeed not without cauſe: for her mind was ſo employed about thinking on night, that ſhe did little all day; which my Miſtreſs perceiving, turned her away; which was no ſmall joy to me, being under reſtraint before.

Now I admitted the Ladies freely to bed with me one at a time. The firſt that came had like to have ſpoiled all; for as ſoon as I was about to — ſhe ſqueakt ſo loud that all the houſe might have heard her, ſome of her Aſſociates running to know what was the matter, ſhe readily told them ſhe thought there was a Mouſe in the bed, for ſhe felt ſomething creep up her thighs: thus ſatisfied, they departed. Having perfected my buſineſs, I enjoyn'd her as I did the other ſilence, but alas! all injunctions on Women to keep a ſecret, are but as ſo many perſwaſions to divulge it. Notwithſtanding I had ſo enjoyned her ſecrecy, yet ſhe made it known to ſome that ſhe entertained a peculiar reſpect for, intending they ſhould participate with her in that pleaſure ſhe enjoyed. To be ſhort, there were few eſcaped me, ſo that I had tired my ſelf that I could hardly go.

To conclude, a Gentlewoman that had held out the laſt, was reſolved now at laſt to expetiment what the others had done. But I ſhall never bewail my ſhame enough, being not able at that time to anſwer her expectations; and ſo ſhe returned, which made me break forth into theſe expreſſions.

What

What Prodigy is this? or what Portent
Is threatned to me by this dry Event?
The Lady was both willing, young, undreſt,
Being in that naked garb, attired beſt,
And yet ſhould'ſt fail now, when deſired meſt,
Suffering the time and pleaſure to be loſt.
Thou mightſt have had what thouſands have deſired.
Yet never to that happineſs aſpired.
Didſt not ſee her mouth water, as theirs do,
Who ſpy a diſh of ſavoury meat or two?
I do confeſs thou art no Caultrons Bauble
To ſweep down ſixteen ſhillings off a Table.
What though thou mightſt not, yet have feard to enter
That fine, ſmooth, moiſt, narrow, ſcarlet Center.
Time was i'm ſure thou well couldſt do the deed,
And to my knowledge plentifully bleed.
Henceforth ſtand ſtiff, redeem thy credit loſt,
Or i'l ne're draw thee but againſt a Poſt.

Some of the Gentlewomen began to find ſtrange alterations in their body, with frequent qualms coming over their ſtomacks, which made me ſick to be gone, and in this manner I did plot my eſcape. My Miſtriſs having a Son much about my ſtature, and one time finding a fit opportunity, I got a ſuit of cloaths of his, with other perquiſits which I put on, reaſſuming my proper ſhape and habit, and ſo with flying colours marched off, inſulting over the conqueſt of ſo many maiden-heads, leaving the *quondam* poſſeſſors thereof to deplore their enſuing miſery, and condemn their own raſh folly.

CHAP. XII.

What a Trick he ſerved a young man of his Acquaintance, whom he met withal accidentally; how he was pinched with hunger, and what wayes he invented to kill it.

I Made all the ſpeed I could to *London*, knowing the largeneſs of that Vaſt City would afford conveniency for my concealment. But then my cloaths much troubled me, knowing nothing would betray me ſooner than them. Now did I ſee the Fates had decreed to favor my Entrepr izes; for I met with a young man of my acquaintance, who ſeeing me, ran and caught me in his Arms, and with very much joy we congratulated each other, and ſo as it is uſual when Friends meet, we muſt drink together. Over our cups, I began to inquire after his condition; He ſhook his head, and ſo related to me a ſad ſtory, which in effect was to this purpoſe in his own words.

Perceiving that my Miſtreſs ſhewing me more than common reſpect, I concluded that ſhe had entertained ſome private favour for me within her breaſt, ſo that I began to be puft up with conceit; neglecting my duty, and now deſpoſing the Chamber-maid, who was before the only Saint I made nightly my oraizons to; withall, I carried my ſelf ſo imperiouſly, that my Maſter was not very well aſſured whether he durſt command or no. My Miſtreſs would ſomtimes heartily laugh, to ſee how ridiculous

ridiculous I carryed my self, which I looked upon as a singular favour, mistaking her smiles for tokens of her love. Indeed, she was very affable and pleasing, which I interpreted leachery. I wrote a Letter with Verses at the bottom, intending at the first opportunity, to deliver them into her hands. My Mistress (as it is customary with Citizens Wives, to light the candle of their husbands estates at both ends) had her Country-house, to which I was sent by my Master, with some bottles of Wine, preparatory for a Feast intended for the accommodation of some special Friend: arriving, I found my Mistress had sent her maid to London *about some business, at which I bless'd propitious stars, to direct me thither in such a fortunate and most desired hour.*

After I had delivered my Message, I began to talk very familiar with my Mistress, she with a smiling countenance, ask'd me, What I meant? *not in the least checking my presumption, which made me more arrogant and bold; telling her,* I was her eternally devoted Servant; *she answered me.* I was bound to be her Servant for a time, and that I must, when commanded, obey her pleasure: *to which last word, I added in my thoughts the* Epithite Venereal, *supposing she meant not to have left it out; with that I replyed,* Mistress, I should not deem my self worthy to be your Servant, if my resolution had not ingaged me to be so perpetually; as for my affection, it shall dayly anticipate your desires; you shall not need to lay your commands on me, since my thoughts shall be solely imployed in contriving wayes how we may injoy each other, to the mutual satisfaction of us both. *At which words, she fell into an excess of laughter, (which I judged the effects of joy) and then asked me,* Whither I was Mad? *I answered,* No; unless too

much love had made me ſo; Deareſt Miſtriſs, read but this Paper, and I hope that will better inform you.

Here he ſtopt, pulling out of his pocket a copy thereof, which was to my beſt remembrance to this purpoſe.

Deareſt Miſtreſs,

FRequently revolving in my thoughts, the condition I now am in, Deſpair ſtands ready to ſeize me; but the conſideration and knowledge of your commiſerating Nature, draws me out of its ruinating Jaws. When I reflect again on the diſparity of our Fortunes, and that it is your Indentured Vaſſal that thus proſtrates his affection at your feet, I fear one blaſt of your juſt Indignation will ſuddainly ſhipwrack all my hopes. I confeſs my error is overmuch confidence, for which I may expect ruine, which commonly attends raſh Attempts; eſpecially daring to ſail in the narrow Seas, without any other Pilot than blind Love, and if I ſhould arrive at my deſired Port, I cannot deliver my Goods without ſtealing Cuſtome. But waving all difficulties of this nature, conſider that Love muſt needs be quinteſſential, that is not drawn from any other intereſt than reciprocal enjoyment; and it muſt needs be exceeding ſtrong and eminent too, that will force its way through the greateſt hazards. Signifie my Pardon by one gracious ſmile, for what I have ſo boldly (yet forceably) diſcovered, and I ſhall eſteem my condition little inferior to what is Celeſtial; which is no happineſs to me without the auſpitious beams of your favour ſhine on me. And ſo ſubſcribe my ſelf according as your ſentence ſhall be, either the

Moſt happy, or moſt miſerable.

The Verſes that were annext to the Letter, he told me, he got a Rimer to compoſe for him which afterwards

wards he found ſtoln out of ſeveral Authors; a line out of one, and a half out of another, and ſo with the courſe thred of his brain botch'd together; which were theſe:

Cupid did wound my heart; I hid the grief
Long time, but durſt not ſeek for your relief;
I found the ſmart increaſed on that ſcore,
For wounds, if not well ſearch'd, but rankle more.
O cure me quickly then, or elſe I die;
Deny not, ſince there's none but you and I.

I withdrew as ſoon as I had delivered my Paper, giving her leave to read in private, what my Love had dictated. About a quarter of an hour after ſhe called me to her, aſſuring me in a day or two, I ſhould receive an anſwer to the purpoſe; and ſo abſconding her diſpleaſure, ſhe ſent me with all expedition home again. After the expiration of three dayes, ſhe came home to her City-houſe: at night ſhe prerended ſome indiſpoſition of body, and deſired to lie by her ſelf; which hearing, I thought my joy would prove a Traytor to my ſuppoſed happineſs; ſhe takes an occaſion to tell me, *About twelve at night I might come to her Bed-chamber, the door whereof ſhe would leave open for me on purpoſe.* In the mean time, ſhe ſhewed my Maſter the Letter, acquainting him with the whole buſineſs. According to the time appointed, I entered the Chamber in my ſhirt; approaching the Bed, I began to pour out my Amorous Expreſſions; and as I had one leg upon the Bed-ſide, ready to enter the Bed, where I thought my Miſtreſs had attended my pleaſure, I thought the devil had waited on my Poſterior, correcting me for not making more haſte. The firſt laſh was ſeconded with three or four more in an inſtant, which made

me caper up and down ſo nimbly about the room, that for my life I could not find the door, at laſt I did; ſpeed was now the onely Guardian I had left, and ſo without pauſing long upon it, I made but one ſtep of the firſt pair of Stairs from top to the bottom, which had liked to have lamed me; before I could recover my ſelf, my Maſter was with me gain, which put freſh expedition into me, and ſo ſtarting up; I leapt down half the next pair, & tumbled down the reſt. By this time he had loſt the cord of his Whip, and fearing leſt he might ſpoil me with the ſtick, deſiſted, bidding me go to bed, leſt I ſhould catch cold after ſo great a heat, and ſo with two or three parting blows I got into my chamber, where I fell into a deep conſultation with my ſelf, the reſult of it was this; I took my curtains and ſheets, and tied them together, and then faſtned one end thereof to the Window; after this I went out of the Window, and ſo ſlid, by that time I was within an half ſtory of the ground, the knot of one of the Curtains ſlipt, ſo that falling from that height, I thought that every bone in my body had been abſolutely broken. Knowing it was no wayes ſafe to lie there and cry *God help me*, I raiſed my ſelf as well as I could, but I had not walked far, before I found my ſelf in no condition of going, wherefore I reſolved to lie under the next Stall. As the Devil would have it, I found a Coblers Stall newly broke open that very night, never queſtioning the place, I crept in, and notwithſtanding my bruiſe by the fall, and whipping beſides, I fell faſt aſleep, ſo ſoundly, that I awaked not, till I was forced to it with an horſe pox. For the Cobler coming to work early in the morning (according to his cuſtome) found his door broken open, with that, he made an hideous noiſe, crying out, He was undone;

for

for the day before he had laid out three shillings four pence, which was all his stock in Leather; all which was stoln, with many old shooes, nay his very working implements; doubtless it was done by one of his own Fraternity, that had informed himself of his late great purchase. The Cobler entring his Stall, found me in one corner fast asleep. He took no other course to awake me, than dragging me by the heels out of my Den, into the Street, crying out, That he had got one of the Rogues, and without any more adoe, fell upon me buffeting me with his fist, and treading me underneath his feet, making himself, both my Judge and Executioner: Thus you see one mischief attends the others heels. I begged him in a pittiful manner to let me alone, and I would confess to him all I knew, desiring him to go with me to the next Ale-house, which accordingly we did. I vowed to him *I* was no ways accessary to his wrong, informing him as much as *I* thought convenient of my sufferings shewing him what a woful plight *I* was in; relating, it was my Masters cruelty that was the cause of all this, and no other fault of mine, then staying the last night out a little too long. The Cobler seemed to commiserate my misery, asking me forgiveness for what he had done, and so we parted. Since by the kindness of a good natured Widow (where *I* lie) *I* have recovered my hurts and strength, and now am overjoyed we should so happily meet.

After this we drank very smartly, but, I forgot not all this while my design on him. *I* asked him frollickly whither he would go to handicap with me, which he readily embraced. *In* conclusion, There was not any thing about us of waring cloaths but we interchanged; scarce had *I* un-cased my self, and put on my Friends cloaths, but in came one

that

that had dogged me, attended by the Conſtable; with a Warrant to ſeize me, who they knew by no other token but my Boarding-Miſtreſſes Sons garments, I had ſtolen for my eſcape. They forthwith laid hold on my Companion, (finding them on him) telling him, *He ſhould ſeverely ſuffer for the wrong he did his Miſtreſs, in the abuſe of her houſe.* Full of horror and amazement, he beſeecheed them not to carry him before his Miſtreſs, knowing how much he had offended her, ſhe would have no mercy on him; this confirmed their belief, that they had found out the Offender. The more he intreated, the more deaf and inexorable were they; and whilſt they were buſied about their miſtaken Criminal-Priſoner, I took an occaſion to give them the ſlip, knowing that a little further diſcourſe would rectifie their Error; what they did with him I know not, neither durſt I be ſo inquiſitive to underſtand: wherefore, leaving him to the mercy of ſuch, as would ſhew but little to him, I ſhall proceed forwards in my own ſtory. My ſtock was now very ſmall; how to increaſe it, I knew not. My invention was daily on the Rack, to find out expedient wayes to ſupply my neceſſary expence. But my money being all ſpent, my belly began to grumble out inſufferable complaints againſt me, ſeeming to charge me with want of ingenuity & induſtry, ſince I injoyed my liberty; for want that man cannot, which wants not them. Alas, what ſhould I do? I uſed what means I could, having no better experience. There was not a Billiard-Table, Boards-End, and Nine-Pin-yard, that I did not daily viſit, frequenting ſuch as had the greateſt reſort: in a ſhort time I learned the art of Spunging ſo perfectly, that I had

had the Title of *Spung-Maſter General* conferred upon me. In thoſe places I learned to take Tobacco which was the chiefeſt part of my food; living in a manner by Smoak, as the Camelion by Air. I fed ſo lightly, that I durſt not ſtir abroad in a high wind; neither durſt I fight leſt one ſingle ſtroak ſhould have hazarded my diſſolution; continual drinking, that ſo waſhed me, that my body was tranſparent, you might have ſeen within me (without diſſection) the motion of the heart; you could have obſerved but little as to my liver, it long ſince had loſt its uſe in the conveyance of the blood, for my ſtomack had nothing therein contained to ſupply it; like an Inns-a Court Kitchin out of Term-time. In ſhort, I appeared like a walking *Skeleton*. I had ſeveral ſuggeſtions within me to proffer my ſelf again to my Maſter; but the ſhame to be ſeen in that condition, deterred me; wherefore, I reſolved to weather it out a little longer, and try whether Fortune would once more be favourable to me. My cloaths were indifferent good which could not but procure me credit, if I would make experiment. By means whereof I had gotten an handſome lodging chamber. It was a publick houſe of entertainment, ſo that here I thought I ſhould have meat, drink & lodging for chalk, and chalk for nothing. I called freely for what was in the houſe, which was readily brought me; but when the ſervants beheld with what celerity, (*Hocus* like) and cleanly conveyance, I had diſpoſed of what was before me, they verily believed in one week, I would cauſe a dearth in the houſe if I ſtaid; wherefore, one of the ſervants acquainted her Miſtreſs with that ſhe had obſerved, alleadging farther invectively againſt me, That I looked like

one

one of thoſe lean Beaſts which have nothing given them to feed on, but vertuous and honeſt Women, that ſhe believed I was the *Genious* of ſome hunger-ſtarved wretch, or a ſhaddow without a ſubſtance, (which was very true as to my pocket.) When I thought it was time to go to bed, I call'd for a candle, not mattering whither I called for a Reckoning. But my Landlady did; for ſaid ſhe, *Sir, It is our cuſtome to reckon with our Ladgers every night what they have had the day, and once a week to diſcharge their lodging.* In truth I did intend to have diſcharged my ſelf of it before the week had been out. I knew not what at preſent to anſwer her, but I was ſeldom to ſeek in ſuch caſes, I deſired her to be content for that night, on the morrow I would have my Trunks brought to her houſe; making it my Quarters for ſome time; and that ſhe ſhould find me a boon companion, drinking freely: *I believe ſo*, ſhe ſaid, *you will be here for ſome time, or may be you will make this your Refuge or Sanctuary for one night; and then you ſay you will drink freely too, give me leave to tell you, you meant at free coſt. Sir, give me my reckoning now, or you ſhall have no lodging here this night.* Do you ſuſpect my Landlady, ſaid I? *Reſpect you*, ſaid ſhe, (miſtaking the word) *for what grounds unleſs I knew you better? and yet I doubt I ſhall know you too well. That's a good one indeed, reſpect a skin full of Bones; a bag of Cheſſmen; a bundle of ſmall Faggot-ſticks. Why, thou Haberdaſher of ſmall wares, do'ſt thou think I will reſpect thee other ways than for thy moneys; unleſs I ſhould be ſo mad as to fall in love with Famine. Come give me my reckoning firſt, and I ſhall talk with you in another Dialect; if not, I ſhall ſet my Currs at thee* (the Tapſter and Hoſtler) *that ſhall worry thy gibb'd Catſhip.* Hearing her ſay ſo, and think-

ing

ing the passage had been clear, I betook my self to flight, but running throw the Entry *I* ran my belly directly against the Tapsters leg, that lay over the bench on which he slept. *I* ran so fiercely, that *I* shoved his head so violently against the board rais'd at the end of the bench, that *I* made his neck double; the knock likewise had like to have turn'd that little brains he had within his head. As for my own part, *I* thought that his foot had run quite into my belly, and that pulling it out he had left his shooe behind. Before *I* could rise, *I* had three or four about me which *I* thought would have limbed me as boys falling out, do their cocks on *Shrove-Tuesday*. At that time *I* would have spared them one limb, provided that would have contented them. But there was no mercy to be had at their hands, especially the shrill note of their Mistresses perpetually moving Tongue, sounding a charge in their ears. Being tyred with me, they would be revenged of my cloaths. They would have stript me (*I* think stark naked for my Reckoning, but that one said, *Let his cloak suffice*; at which, another pulled so furiously at it, that miraculously, without renting that thin transparent garment, he got it all but the cape. *In* this condition *I* was brought before my new Landlady; *I* asked her what was to pay, *Sirrah* (said she) *more then thou hast in thy pocket*; (2 s. 4 d.) As well as *I* could speak, *I* demanded how it came to be so much. *Why*, (said she) *there is for Beef* 1 s. *for Bread* 4 d. *six pipes of Tobacco, and three pots of Ale; all this thou hadst in less then half an hour*. *I* would not contradict her, though *I* knew it was near an hour; *I* desired her to keep my Cloak for the reckoning, but durst not threaten her for her abuse. Being about Hay-making

time,

time, *I* walked out into the Fields, resolving to spend that night in contemplation. *I* had now time to *consider* the damage *I* sustained in this skirmish: they had carried away all my Ribbands with their fingers, otherwise my cloaths received the least harm. My Nose resembled a black pudding before it is boyled, and my Eyes were fled into my head for fear of such melancholy meat. My cheeks were so puft up with swelling pride, that they were resolved to close up the portals of my Opticks, that they might not be eye witnesses of the height of their ambition. My ears were so maulled with their fleshy Hammers, that I heard a peal within my head for joy, *I* suppose that my eyes had taken up their residence with my brains. At last *I* felt something about my shoulders; at first *I* thought it had been the weight of the blows, but feeling, found it a part of my friend that still hung about my neck, and would not leave me; which put me in minde of that faithful Cloak that would never leave its Master, although his Master had attempted all-ways imaginable to leave it. I must needs say, I loved my Cloak so well, as that it grieved me much to be compelled to part with it. It had been a servant to servants, ever since the setting up of the first billiard-table, whence it deriv'd its Pedegree. Being deprived of its imployment; and dispossest of its antient habitation, its heart strings were ready to break, and being not able to take a nap for grief, turned changling. The young man I had it of, told me, that from the fifteenth successively, it was descended to him; but they were unworthy to him, that having had his best days, would turn him off in his extream old age. I have him so fresh in my memory, that *I* cannot but condole his loss.

Cloak,

Cloak, if I may ſo call thee, though thou art
Thus raviſh'd from me, don't abruptly part.
Thou didſt not take diſtaſte, and ſo art gon.
Cauſe once I call'd thee a meer hanger on.
'Twas but in jeſt; for had I now my will,
I'de have thee for to hang about me ſtill.
Now I may tax thee juſtly, for I ſee
That now th'art nothing elſe but levitie;
Nay when I had thee ſcarcely did I know,
Sometimes whether I had thee on or no.
Thou wert ſo thin, and light, that ſome have thought
Thee made of that ſame web Arachne *wrought,*
And ſay th'art uſeleſs now, unleſs men put
Thee like a Cobweb to a finger cut.
I love thee ſtill for better and for worſe;
He that divorc'd us let him have my curſe.
Sure 'twas a red Nos'd fellow, for I know,
He coming near, it was but tomb and go.
But let him keep thee, for thou'lt uſeleſs be
To him; thick cloaths ſuits beſt with knavery.

Day appearing I got me a ſtick out of a hedge, and ſo walked in *Querpo* into the City. I walked up and down, but met with none of my acquaintance on whom I might faſten on as a *bur*. Noon approaching, my belly began to Chime, I thought all the meat in *Eaſt-cheap*, would not lay that ſpirit hunger had raiſed within me. Coming by a bakers ſhop, I pretended to be ignorant of the City, and as I was asking him the way to ſuch a place, not caring what. I happily ſecured a penny loaf; which I carried off undiſcovered; I thought it not good to cumber my pocket with it, wherefore at two bits I gave it my belly to carry. Surely at that time I had a *Oſtriches* ſtomack;

ſtomack; every thing I put into my mouth, paſſed through me like Quickſilver. Going a little farther, I came to an Ordinary, where I ſaw two ſitting in a lower Room expecting their meat, I ſate me down in the next little box to them. Immediately there was brought to them powdred Beef and Turnips; the young man that ſerved them, came to me, demanding what I would have, I bid him let me alone and not ſpeak too loud, for thoſe two which were next me, were my very good friends, and I would ſtartle them by and by with my unexpected appearance, at which he left me. Finding my opportunity, I ſlipt my hands through a whole, in the form of an heart, which was in the partition that divided us, and laying hold on the Turnips, I ſpake aloud, you hoggs are ye at the Roots, I will make one one among you inſtantly, and ſo brought out my handful; having devoured them in a trice, I preſented my ſelf to their view, and ſate down with them: *Gentlemen*, ſaid I, *excuſe my frollick, I am in a merry humour to day.* They concluded what I ſaid, to be a truth, and bad me welcome. *Nay*, ſaid I, *my meat will come inſtantly as a ſupply*; and ſo it had need, for we made a clear board immediately. Seeing this, they called the boy, taxing him for ſloth, that he did not bring my meat. *Sir*, ſaid he, *the Gentleman did not order me to bring any*; at which they frowned, and began to charge me with incivility. *What are ye angry, ſaid I?* To which they replied, *Affirmatively*: *if ſo*, I anſwered, (laying my hand upon a full pot of Ale) *I value your anger no more than the drinking this Pot, which I ſwallowed at two gulps, and ſo bid them farewel*; leaving them to call for another Ordinary.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

How he had like to have been tranſported, being taken up by a Kid-napper, vulgarly called a Spirit.

HAving ſatisfied my ſtomach, I walkt along with much more courage than before, which had been to little purpoſe, had I not had a ſtick in my hand: For there was hardly a dog in the ſtreet (which I went through) that gave me not his *grinning Salutation*, and would when my back was turned (knowing elſe I would never have ſuffered their humility) have kiſt my very *heels*, had not my ſtick prevented their *Snearing Dog-ſhips* mouths. I have wondred often why Dogs will bark ſo inceſſantly at the ſight of a Tinker, Pedlar, Tom-a-Bedlam, nay, any ſuſpitious fellow, till I found it my ſelf by experience, that by natural inſtinct, they know and hate the ſcent of a Rogue. And ſo it appears by ſmelling out a *Spirit*, who perceiving my idle, loytering motion, accoſted me. Well may he be called a *Spirit*, ſince his nature is like the Devils, to ſeduce any he meets withal, whom he can perſwade with allurements, and deluding falſities to his purpoſe.

After he had asked me many impertinent queſtions, he invited me to drink with him; I ingeniouſly told him I had not a penny, otherwiſe his motion would be acceptable to me. At which he caſt up his eyes to heaven, and laying his hands on his breaſt, alas poor young man, ſaid he, what pitty it is ſuch a luſty fellow as thou art ſhouldſt want money; which argues thou art both deſtitute of friends, and an imployment alſo. Well, I'le ſay no

more for the preſent, but before we part, I'le ſtudy ſome way or other for thy advantage; which I ſhall do meerly out of commiſeration to the miſerableneſs of thy condition, as alſo out of reſpect to thy Father, whom I am confident I have heretofore known, by the reſemblance thou beareſt him in thy countenance. I could not but ſmile to my ſelf to hear how this Raſcal diſſembled; not diſcovering my thoughts, I willingly went with him to drink, reſolving to ſee what the event would be; after he had paus'd a while, well, ſaid he, I have found it.

There is a Merchant, an intimate friend of mine, that wants a Store-houſe-keeper; Now if you can caſt Accompts ever ſo indifferently, you ſhall finde entertainment from him, and 40*l.* *per annum* for encouragement. I told him that I joyfully accepted his kinde proffer, and that I ſhould refer my ſelf to be diſpoſed of as he ſhould think fit. With that, he embrac'd me, ſaying, within two days I ſhould go aboard the ſhip where the Merchant was, who would go along with me to *Virginia* (where he pretended the Merchants Plantation lay) in the mean time you ſhall go along with me to my houſe, where you ſhall lie, and ſhall receive from me what your neceſſities require. I had heard before, how ſeveral had been ſerv'd in this kinde; ſo that being fore-warn'd, I was fore-arm'd, *præmonitus, præmunitus*. He carried me away preſently to *Wapping*, and hous'd me: I was brought into a Room where ſix or ſeven were all ſmoaking. They ſmoak'd out of their mouthes like a Chimney that belongs to a Brewers Stoke-hole, ſo that there was little diſcernable but ſmoak, and the glowing coals of their pipes. Certainly the ſmell of this room would have out-done *Aſſa-fœtida*, or burnt Feathers in the cure of Ladies troubled with

with the Fits of the Mother. As to the ſight, the place reſembled hell, ſo did it likewiſe as to its ſcent, compounded of the perfume of ſtinking Tobacco and Tarpawlin. So that I concluded the reſemblance moſt proper,

In hell damn'd ſouls, fire, ſmoak, and ſtink appear,
Then this is hell, for theſe four things were here.

I was ſeated between two, leſt I ſhould give them the ſlip.

After I had been there a while, the Cloud of their Smoak was ſomewhat diſſipated, ſo that I could diſcern two more in mine own condemnation: but alas, poor ſheep, they ne're conſidered where they were going, it was enough for them to be freed from a ſeven years Apprenticeſhip, under the tyranny of a rigid Maſter (as they judged it, coming but lately from ſucking the breaſts of a too indulgent mother) and not weighing (as I know not how they ſhould) the ſlavery they muſt undergo for five years, among Bruits in forreign parts, little inferior to that which they ſuffer who are *Gally-ſlaves*. There was little diſcourſe amongſt them, but the pleaſantneſs of the ſoyl of that Continent (we were deſign'd for, out of deſign to make us ſwallow their guilded Pills of Ruine) and the temperature of the air, the plenty of Fowl and Fiſh of all ſorts; the little labour that is performed or expected having ſo little trouble in't, that it rather may be accounted a paſtime than any thing of puniſhment; and then to ſweeten us on farther, and they inſiſted on the pliant loving natures of the women there; all which thy uſed as baits to catch us ſilly Gudgeons. As for my own part I ſaid but little but what tended to the approbation of what they ſaid.

For all my aim (as I related before) was to underſtand the drift of this Rogue, and then endeavour to get what I could from him. By this time ſupper was talkt of by our Maſters; ſo choice they were in their dyet, that they could not agree what to have. At laſt one ſtands up and proclaiming ſilence, ſaid, that a Diſh of Bruiſs was the moſt *Princely diſh* of any. And to tell you truly, by his looks, I thought he had been begot juſt as his Mother had put a Sop into her mouth, of that Stomach murdring ſtuff, the greaſe running about her chops, which pleaſing her fancy, ſtruck ſo deep an impreſſion in the imagination upon her conception, that the face of that thing ſhe brought forth, lookt much like a *Toaſt* ſoaking in a Cooks *Dripping-pan*.

That he might perſwade the reſt, this way to indugle his appetite, he added farther, it was a Diſh would not be expenſive, and ſoon ready. My Landlady to back him on, ſaid, ſhe had ſome skimmings of the pot, which ſhe had been collecting theſe three months, ſome whereof ſhe queſtion'd not but to procure, and let her alone to order it ſo, that we ſhould ſay we never had a better diſh aboard in our lives.

Another contradicting him, preferred a bowl of Peaſepottage before the chiefeſt meat whatever, that he could never look into the pot and ſee them boyl round, but that his heart leapt within him, and kept time with their motion. My maſter (that was their Senior) ſcorn'd to be controul'd in his fancy; and therefore poſitively determined to have ſome *Poor John*, ſwearing that the *Great Mogul* did eat nothing elſe thrice a week, and that *Attabaliba* (that Indian King whom *Cortez* conquered) caus'd a *Sacrifice* every day to be made of them to his Idol, commanding them to be laid on an Altar made of ſome coals of fire,

fire, then the fat of some beast rubb'd thereon (because they had no Butter) and so presented to the Idol, afterwards to the King, which he did eat with inexpressible satisfaction. Order was given that this *delicate Fare* might be provided. Though they did *beat* it most *unmercifully*, yet it would not *yield*, resolving rather to be *broken* in *pieces*, than to become unlike its *Masters*, or shew any thing of a *tender nature*. There was one alotted for my proportion, which I us'd as they had done, laying it on the coals a little while, and so committing it to my teeths disposal. I never found till now that my teeth could be thus shamefully baffled. They made several assaults upon it to little purpose. My teeth at length fearing a total conquest, desperately and enragedly seiz'd on the thinnest and weakest part, and holding it as fast as a Vise, at last in the conflict over-powered one small fleak. Now did I really imagine my self at Sea, where for want of provision I was forc'd to feed on *Cordage*, or the *Ship-sides*. Had this poor creature been ground *small*, I might have made as hard a shift to have swallowed it, as those Seamen did the *Sawdust* of Deal-boards coming from *Norway*, and destitute of other food. That night I slept but little, contriving a way for my deliverance, neither could I, had I swallowed *Opium* for that purpose, for the innumerable quantity of *Buggs* (as some call them) that had *invaded* my body, being weary (as I suppose) of inhabiting any longer the *dry mansion* of that old rotten Bedsteed on which I lay. In the morning I found the *ruines* of a Looking-glass in the window, which I took up to discover what *knots* or nodes those were I felt o're spreading my face. The sight whereof struck into me a pannick fear, verily believing I had been infected with the spotted Feaver.

I began to curſe the Bed and Sheeets, imagining the Contagion proceeded from them; to be ſatisfied herein, I drew aſide at the Beds feet, the Curtain (that is to ſay a part of a Tilt) pinn'd there to keep the wind off, which otherwiſe would have fann'd us to death, coming in ſo furiouſly through the Portcullise of the window: (for glaſs there was little) At firſt ſight I queſtion'd whither I was not lately riſen from the dead, ſince there was viſible before my eyes the Black Cloath that covered my Herſe. Had not we gone to bed without a Candle over night, I ſhould ſooner have choſen a Bulk than this Bed to lie on. It might have been a good *Quære*, whether thoſe ſheets had ever been waſht ſince their weaving, and continualy ſince imploy'd by whores and bawds ſucceſſively, to ſweat out their contagious humors, and matter proceeding from their ulcerated Bodies.

My pretended friend perceiving my amazement, bid me be of good courage, for thoſe marks in my face were onely occaſion'd by a *ſtinking ſort of Vermine*, who ſeldome meddle with ſuch as are accuſtomed to them, onely giving their welcom to ſuch as were *New-comers*. I took theſe ſufferings as patiently as I could; but thinking it was an ill coming for me to either of them, and it ſhould not be long before I would take my *farewell*. We had ſcarce Breakfaſted, before a Meſſenger came into the room, and with much ſeeming reſpect pretended to deliver a Meſſage to my friend. I gueſs'd it was to inform him how the ride ſerv'd, and ſo it prov'd. My friend told me we muſt be gone inſtantly, for the Merchant attended my coming. Wherefore we preſently went down to the ſtairs, to take Boat, by the way he told me that he would go with me in the ſame ſhip, and take as much care of me as he would of his own ſon,

whom

whom I understood afterwards he had too sure, above a year since stoln away, and sold him as a slave: One while I thought to have ran for it; another time I thought to have cry'd out, *A Spirit, a Spirit*, but that the thought of the Water-men being his Accomplices, deter'd me. I was at my wits end, not knowing what to do. Coming into the Boat, being now destitute of all relief, I ask'd him according to his former pretence, whether he resolv'd to go to Sea with me? yes reply'd he. I question Sir (said I) whether you ever told a truth in your life, but I am resolvd you shall now: and withal I flung my self with him overboard. Those which were in the Boat, immediately endeavoured at our rising to pull us into the Boat. But I clapping my hands unfortunately on the side of the Boat on which they within leaned, I overturn'd it upon me. The first thought this accedent produc'd in me, was that a Whale had swallowed me, and that I was in a dark concave of his belly, or that Death had arrested me, and clapt me up a close Prisoner for my sins, in Hells deep and black Dungeon. But by the industry and expedition of many Watermen, eye-witnesses of this passage (which had like to have prov'd tragical) the Boat was recovered, and I the first person taken up and set on shore.

Multorum manibus Grande levatur onus.

Many hands make light work. I here staid to see what was become of my good Friend (a pox take him) but with what speed I could, attended with a great number of little *hooping Owlets* (I mean the young Fry of Scullars) I securd my self from this *Anthropopola* or Man-seller; A charitable woman seeing me in this *pickle* (for it was salt water, which my *Sous'd guts* may testifie, if they please, in their grumbling manner of *speaking*) told me that she would

entertain me till to morrow. This was the greateſt *Cordial* could be appli'd to this *croſs*; without many complements, I thankt her for her great love. Now becauſe ſhe ſaw what condition I was in, ſhe immediately put me to bed.

CHAP. XII.

How under the pretence of begging, he ſtole a Cloak, and with that went to a Gaming Ordinary; what a bold Adventure he there made, and the ſucceſs thereof.

PArting from this good woman, I began to think that the Art of ſtealing might be reckoned amongſt the liberal Sciences, for though it may be call'd a *Handicraft*, yet it cannot be lookt on as *Mechanick*. This is the *Art*, the right practice whereof is the true *Philoſophers ſtone*, the *Elixar* of life, with which many turn *Poyſon* into *Medicine*, courſe cloath into cloath of Gold, hunger into fulneſs and ſatiety, convert rags into Sattins, and all this done by a quick wit and ſlight of hand. The Antiquity and Dignity of this profeſſion, I ſhall relate elſewhere, and ſhall proceed on in my Adventures.

The Evening or Twilight being come, I chanc'd to look in at a door, and perceiving none at hand, I went in boldly, reſolving if I met any to beg an Alms of them, having before premeditated what I had to ſay, *viz.* that I was a poor diſtreſſed young Gentleman, my Father, and Mother, nay all my relations I knew, being dead, and that knowing not what to do, was forc'd (under the covert of the night) to beſeech the aſſiſtance of charitable minded perſons. But in my way I found none that ſhould occaſion my uſing this form.

I found

I found in the Parlor a good Camlet Cloak, which I made bold to put on, and so very gravely walk'd out of the house, but coming to the door, you must think there was *Wild-fire* in my breech, that hastned me out of the street. Being gotten a Bow shot off, I thought my self indifferent secure; so that I slackned my pace, and in that equipage I went to an Ordinary, I lookt on a while, but my fingers itch to be at it. Why, thought I, have I not adventur'd a *Goal or whipping, or an hanging*, and shall I now fear a *kicking, a pumping, a Bog-house*. These considerations made me resolutely take up the Box, and I threw a main, which was 7. a great deal of money was presently set me, I knew it was but to little purpose to balk them; so that confidently I threw at all, which I nickt with eleven, and so continued holding seven hands together. Perceiving I had got a considerable quantity of money; and fearing I might lose that which I had so boldly adventured for, I thankt my propitious stars, and the Gentlemen, who had rather lose their money, than suspect any that hath the Garb of one well Extracted, and so bad them good night. A priviledge too many *Sharking Ubiquitarians* use without interruption, being most commonly in fee with the *Waiters* and *Box-keepers*, who will be sure to be in the behalf of such confident Cheats, if they lose, pretending great knowledge of them, that they are men of repute, civil and responsible, which frequently so pevails upon a *Mouth*, that he hath not a *word* to say more. Questionless Ordinaries were first impartially founded, interdicting all play but which was upon the *Square*; but since by the connivance of the *Box-keepers*, when the Table grows thin, and few at it, let the stranger beware, for the *Box-keeper* shall walk off, pretending some speedy dispacth of a busines

con-

concerning the *House of Office*, &c. whilst your Antagonist shall put the change upon you, or make use of his own *Jack-in-a-box*, and then had you 500l. (would you set like a *Gamester*) he would have it too a penny in a short while, with whom the *Waiters* go snips. If at any time such they know want an *High flyer*, &c. they know how, and when to supply him.

Full fraught with this good fortune, and so laden I was ready to sink, I resolv'd to moor my Vessel in the next Harbour. The Landlord whence I came, was very loath to entertain me, his lodger having serv'd him a scurvy trick the night before, conveying out of the window, the Furniture of a room that cost him 40 l. besides a great silver Tankerd, which the Gentleman would have fill'd with stale Beer and Sugar, to stand by his bed-side all night, pretending it was his custome. But I desiring him to lay up a parcel of money for me till the next morning, quite put out the eye of his Jealousie. I shew'd my self that night very exceeding noble, concealing my success at play, that he might conclude the greatness of my expence, proceeded from the nobleness of my nature having a good estate to back it. I was conducted to bed with many Ceremonies, and abundance of respect; Sleep I could not, for thinking how to dispose of my self. I had experimented the various exigencies and extremities an unsetled condition is accompanied withal, and knowing how securely I could purloin from my Master, if I would moderate my theft; I concluded to supplicate my Master by a Letter, for my reception into his service, not forgetting my Mistresses *quondam* kindnesses. If my Master should refuse to re-entertain me, I had by me what might supply my necessities, till I had re-considered how to improve my stock, or bestow my self. Nor to delay

delay time, the next day I wrote him this Letter.

SIR,

HAving seriously considered the greatnes of my folly in running from so good a Master, (whom I may more rightly intitle Father) with tears I beg merey of God my Creator, and forgiveneſs of you my preſerver. Mitigate my offence by revolving in your mind the fewneſs of years, which makes me (as it doth moſt others) prone to rambling fancies. Look then favorably on my long abſence from you, as a meer exiliency, a youthful elapſe, which maturity of age may rectifie. If you can forgive my follies, I will ſtudy to forget them, and daily endeavour the propagation of my fidelity in the remainder of my time. By the Bearer hereof you may ſignifie your pleaſure.

Sir, I am your cordially penitent
Servant, *&c.*

With much joy my maſter read this Letter, and haſten'd him away to bring me to him. Having converted my ſilver into Gold, ſowing it in my Collar and Waſtband, and putting my ſelf into a Garb convenient for his ſight, I went to him.

CHAP. XIII.

His Maſter ſheweth him more kindneſs than formerly; the ill requital he made him, by Cuckolding him, an accident that fell out thereupon, which produced two remarkable Stories, deduc'd from the ſtrength of Imagination.

MY Maſter upon my reception, told me he had freely forgiven me, and if that I would henceforward endeavour the proſecution of a more regular courſe of life, he would forget too my paſt follies.

I pro-

I promis'd him more than the ſtricteſt Zealot was able to do, and beg'd him pardon aforehand, if he found a defect in performance.

As my expreſſions gave my Maſter much content, ſo my return (I perceiv'd by my Miſtreſſes eyes) gave her the greateſt ſatisfaction. My Maſter began to doat on me again, ſeeing I daily trebled my diligence, and ſo active I was in every thing that concern'd his affairs, that it was hard for any to anticipate me in my intention.

This gain'd ſo much upon his facile good nature, that I had liberty to wear my Hat, and ſit at Table with him, neither would he command me any thing ſervile. I had (as formerly) the ſame ſollicitations from my *Brother Snippers*, but fearing leſt one time or other I might be ſnapt by the timerous nature of ſome, who if once taxt, will confeſs, not onely as to themſelves, but likewiſe detect the whole knot of a *Brother-hood*; I reſovl'd to have no more to do with them, but would ſnip ſecurely by my ſelf, knowing, that in any ſecret deſign, if many are concern'd, their buſineſs cannot be long kept private. I now kept cloſe to my buſineſs, not harbouring the leaſt temptation to any extravagancy, and had ſequeſtred my ſelf from what might render me publickly notorious, and onely ſtudied by what means I might raiſe my Fortune, intending to build my future eſtate upon the ruine of other men; having nothing of mine own but my late purchaſe at play, my onely way was (as I thought by ſome's ſucceſs therein) to make the world believe I was really reform'd, and ſo create to my ſelf a credit; whereas I was onely a *Devil* converted into an *Angel* of *light*, or a *Woolf* in *Sheeps-clothes*. Now did I begin to *cant* religiouſly

religiously, and not omit one Sabbath wherein I did not take Sermons Notes, judging this religious cloak to be the best expedient to screw my self farther into my Mistresses favour, who doted on *Morning Exercises*, and monethly *Fasts*. If my Master had forgot to do the *duty* of the day, I would with much respect put him in mind of the neglect, desiring that I might repeat what had been delivered. As they looked upon my conversion more miraculous than that of St. *Paul*, so they gave me the greatest incouragement, lest like *weak women*, I might prove a Back-slider. There were few private meetings my Mistress heard of, but by the leave of my Master, I must conduct her to them; which were as so many portents of our private meetings afterwards, where *Venus* should appoint.

I am sorry that I am so uncharitable as to say that the *zeal* of her *Spirit* was not so *hot*, in *kindling* the *coals* of her *devotion*, as the *motion* of the flesh pricking her on to the *understanding* of some thing else, which the consequence will make appear. Every day I had some remark of her love, which I receiv'd with much submissive respects, pretending I understood not her meaning; which added but fewel to the blazing flame of love within her. I could not be ignorant, that since she began to court me she could prosecute it to the end. Her Courtship me thought was very preposterous, she might have first receiv'd the charge from me, and by that means she would have found me prepar'd, whereas otherwise she might have been deceiv'd in her expectation.

My Mistress gave me so many opportunities, and signified her desires by so many tokens and dumb expressions, that I began to condemn my fears.

which

which rendred me unworthy of her favours, in not boldly entring that *Breach* that was made to my hand. The Beſieger deſerves not the honour of poſſeſſing that *City*, whoſe *Gates* are freely opened to him, yet dares not *enter*. Whil'ſt I was thus ruminating, my Miſtreſs came to the Counting-houſe where I was writing, and leaning upon my ſhoulder, askt me what I was doing; I told her, Nothing but writing. *Nothing*, I believe, ſaid ſhe, nor never will do *any thing*, but draw up Blanks, without ever filling up the *ſpaces*, and ſo abruptly left me. She knew the quickneſs of my apprehenſion, and ſo left the interpretation thereof to my own conſtruction.

Not long after, (thinking her words had left a deep impreſſion (as they did) and withall concluding I would give her the ſenſe of them, when I had an opportunity; She informs my Maſter that ſhe had a great deſire to viſit a Gentlewoman ſhe had not ſeen a long time, and requeſted that her man *Thomas* (for that was my name) might wait on her, to which he aſſented. Though I *led her*, yet I wondred where ſhe *led me*, through one ſtreet into another, till we arrived at the water-ſide. She bid me call for a pair of Oars; which I accordingly did. The Watermen were very inquiſitive, according to their cuſtom, to know whether we intended. Well, well, ſaid ſhe, put off, and then it will be time enough for you to underſtand. Now, ſaid ſhe, row us up to *Fox-hall*. I for my part was ſomewhat amazed; yet I partly gueſt at what ſhe drove at. I kept at a diſtance ſhewing her the reſpect of a ſervant; which ſhe taking notice of, laught, ſaying, Come Cuz, why doeſt not ſpeecrer? To which I repli'd as familiarly (for by this

this time I had much improv'd the ſtock of my confidence) I were beſt to ſit a little neerer you, ſince I ſhall be the beſt expedient to ballance the Boat even, or trim it, for you are but *light, on your ſide.* This expreſſion I doubt netled her, for preſently thereupon ſhe ſhot a peircing dart from her eye (which I fancied to have penetrated my very ſoul) how now Cuz, ſaid ſhe, I thought you had a better opinion of me, I underſtand the Riddle. Your expreſſions may be very *dark* to ſome, however I have too much *light* in it. I would have made an Apology for my ſelf, but that ſhe hindred me by whiſpering me in the ear, to this effect, that if ſhe was *light*, there was no other cauſe but my ſelf, and that if I abus'd her love any longer, ſhe would ſit the heavier on my skirts. Landing, we went ſtreight to Spring-Garden, by the way ſhe told me I muſt lay aſide all formality, and for the better carrying on the deſign we went upon, ſhe would have me as afore aſſume the title of Cuz. We were conducted into an obſcure Bower, I ſuppoſe one of *Loves Chappels of Eaſe*, where without a *Clew* it would be hard for any to find us. There was not any thing wanting that might delight the appetite, which with much freedom we enjoy'd together.

Now ſaid my Miſtriſs, I ſhall take of the Veil of my modeſty, and diſcover to thee the very *naked ſecrets* of my heart. The firſt time that ever I ſaw thee I had more than a common reſpect to thee, and there was not a time ſince, wherein I had the ſight of thee, but that it added new fewel to the flame of my affection: I us'd all poſſible means to ſmother or blaſt it in the bud, but could not: I ſummoned my reaſon to confute my paſſion, and not-

notwithſtanding, I alleadged that there was a diſproportion in our age, and unſuitableneſs as to our condition; and laſtly, how great a ſtain it would be to my religious profeſſion; yet Love got the Victory over theſe, and would have been too ſtrong for ten times as many; the reſt ſhe ſupplyed with kiſſes, which were infinite.

Having gain'd a little breath, and ſhe again having lent me the uſe and *diſpoſal* of my own mouth, I return'd to this her Amorous Oration ſomething ſuitable to it by the way of retalliation; Proteſting with invocations, that ſince ſhe had ſo compleated my happineſs by her love, I would periſh before I would be guilty of the leaſt abuſe therein.

That had it not been for the ſence of my unworthineſs, and fear of hazarding her love, and ſo gained her diſpleaſure, no other difficulty ſhould have deter'd me from declaring and diſcovering what ſhe had prevented me in, adding what were the quinteſſence of all lovers contracted into one body, it could not equalize mine. Come, ſaid ſhe, let us leave of talking in ſuch idle phraſes, let future conſtancy make apparent the reality of our affections, and let us not loſe any time wherein we may mutually enjoy each other. It is but a folly for me to mince the matter, but I will be plain. By the way let me leave theſe inſtructions with you.

Let not my love cauſe any ſlighting or diſreſpect in you to your Maſter, neither let it ſo puff you up with pride, as to contemn your fellow ſervants. In company ſhew much more reverence to me than formerly. In private when none ſees us but our ſelves, be as familiar and free as actions can demonſtrate. Be conſtant to me alone, for true love will not admit of plurality. Be ſecret and ſilent,

and

and follow not the common practiſe of vain-glorious Fools, that in requital of thoſe favours they have received in private of ſome credulous Female, will make their braggs of them in publick. As if it were not enough for them to rob them of their Chaſtities, but muſt likewiſe murther their Reputations. Have a ſpecial care you ſlight me not, (as ſome ſqueamiſh or curious Stomacks uſe feeding too long on one ſort of Food, though never ſo delicious) for a Womans love deſpiſed, will turn into extreme hatred, and will be ever reſtleſs till malice and revenge have conſulted with Invention, how to be more then even with the ſlighting Injurer. She propounded more Articles, which I have forgot now, but I remember I ſealed them without a *witneſs*. We made an end of our buſineſs for that time, with much expedition, to the intent the tediouſneſs of our ſtaying might not be ſuſpected by the ignorant *Cuckold* at home: I have reaſon now for ſo calling him.

Coming home, I applyed my ſelf to the buſineſs of the Shop as before, enjoyning my eyes a ſevere penance, not ſo much as to look towards that Object they ſo dearly loved. According to my uſual time I went to Bed, but ſleep I could not, for thinking on what I had done. About one a clock I was much ſtartled, to hear ſomething come into my chamber; but before I could give my eyes the liberty for a diſcovery, my Miſtreſs had gotten within the ſheets, and not daring to ſpeak, becauſe my Maſter lay in the next room, moſt commonly by himſelf, and her chamber was the next to that, (and in a Trundle-bed underneath my Miſtreſs's bed lay the Maid.) Neer upon day-break

my sweet Bed-fellow left me, at an unhappy time, for then was my Master awake, which might have ruined us both, which had so faln out, had he been resolute or couragious; but on the contrary, exceeding timerous, but more especially, childishly afraid of the supposed walking of spirits: For hearing the boards crack twice or thrice, with the weight of her body; besides, by the help of Starlight, perceiving something to move all in white, he shrunk underneath the cloaths, not daring to put out his head; now did his imagination work as *strongly* almost as his *Breech*, suggesting strange and ridiculous things to his fancy. But I shall give him leave to tell his own story. A little after it was day, being almost stifled for want of fresh Air, & choak'd with the stink that was in the Bed, he boldly and valiantly put his head out of the coverlid, & after he had thrice exorcis'd the Devil, or the supposed evil Spirit, with avoid *Satan*, repeating as often that Scriptural Sentence, *Resist the Divil and he will flye from thee:* He called out as loud as he might for me to come to him. I leapt out of Bed, and ran to him, asking him what was the matter: O *Thomas*, said he, light a Candle quickly; I running in haste to light the Candle, fell (by mistaking the first step) down the stairs, which made a terrible noise: my Master hearing me, cry'd out, (saying, O God, what will become of me?) thinking the Devil indeed had mistook me for himself, and that he was horsing me on his back to carry me away; with that he fell to prayer so fervently loud, that upstarts the Mistress, and the Maids, running to know what was the matter: fear had so possessed him, that he could not be perswaded, but that they ere some of the Devilish crew. At

At first they thought him to be fallen mad; but finding out the cause of this distraction, with much ado my Mistress made him sensible of his mistake. Being fully assured, that they were not (yet) damned Spirits, he relates what he had seen, in this manner: My Mistress afterwards told me, that had it not been for laughing, which so busied her, that her sense of smelling for that time had left her, she could never have endured to hear him out, for that notorious stink, which came from the Bed, when he stirred ever so little.

I wonder'd, said he, that contrary to my usual custom, *I* awak'd about four a clock, whereas *I* used to sleep soundly, thou knowest till eight. *I* hearkned, at first I perceived onely the boards to crack, but presently after *I* heard chains rattle, and the stools flung about the room, the bed, and *I* in it, *danced* up and down, as if a *Scotch Bag-pipe* had been play'd upon by a *Northern Witch*, and the Devil the while had Danced with me, and the Bed a Morrice, (supplying the *Bellows* with wind.) Sometimes they pull'd me out of Bed, and laid me on the cold floor, and then tost me in again like a *Dog in a Blanket*.

Hearing no noise, *I* attempted to peep out; but scarcely had mine eyes recovered the top of the Bed-cloths, when *I* saw standing by me, a composition of meer bones, with a shrowd thrown over his shoulders, like an *Irish Brachin*, or a *Scotch Pladd*, with a light Taper in one hand (I knew not what use he could make of it, for there were onely *holes* in his head instead of eyes) and an Hour-glass in the other: he grinn'd at me with his teeth, (for he had no lips) and shaking his chains left me,

which ſight ſo terrified me, that I had like to have ſhot out (like a *Pudding* in a *Bag*) all that was within me. My Miſtreſs had like to have broken out into extreme laughter, had not the conſideration of danger (that might have enſued thereon) hindred her.

After this, it was a long time before he would be perſwaded to lie in that Chamber again, which made me curſe his ſtrong conceit, for by this means he would lie with his wife, which interrupted our ſweet venereal paſtime. As for my part, I believed he would never have return'd to his own chamber again, for he trembled when he paſt through it in the day time; and if alone, he would ſo thunder down the ſtairs (fear giving wings to his feet) as if (*Vulcan*-like) he had been ſent by *Jupiter head-long* in a meſſage.

Another accident (happning not long after) cur'd him in part of his ridiculous belief, grounded on nothing elſe but fancy: In the Sellar, on a certain beam that went croſs, there were great quantity of Tenter-hooks placed there, ſome to hang meat on, others of a ſmaller ſort for other uſes. Our Cat being ſomewhat ravenous, was following the ſcent, and had gotten upon the Beam; her foremoſt feet ſlipping, ſhe was ſtrangely caught by the tail, and not able to recover her ſelf: Being terribly pained by the hook, ſhe made a moſt hideous noiſe, which made our Dog fall a howling. This ſtrange din firſt approached my Maſters ears, who awaking my Miſtreſs, asked her now whether ſhe would believe her own ears. At firſt ſhe confeſt to me, ſhe knew not what to think, her conſcience being yet tender (which having no long time accuſtomed

ſtomed her ſelf to ſin, was not hardned and ſear'd up) put her in mind of what ſhe had lately committed, ſo that ſhe had like to have concluded that it was *Satan* was ſent to *buffet* her: But ſhe having a martial ſpirit, and not eaſily daunted, ſhe hearkned further, and then judg'd that Thieves had broken into the houſe.

My Maſter all this while was *breathing his laſt at both ends*, whileſt my Miſtreſs leap'd out of Bed, and came to my Chamber door, bidding me in all haſte to riſe, for there were Thieves in the houſe. I confeſs I had no great mind to be kill'd, and therefore I was in no great haſte to riſe, ſometimes buttoning my Doublet, and anon unbuttoning it again: perceiving that I delaid, ſhe came again, taxing me with Cowardiſe, and meanneſs of Spirit, which put new life into me, making me reſolve to adventure my life, rather then hazard the loſs of her good opinion.

Finding my Miſtreſs in her ſmock, I thought it a ſhame for me to have any cloaths on: and ſo naked as I was, we march'd on. Coming to the Stairhead, my fancy troubled me a little too, for the noiſe had ſo amaz'd me, that I would fain have my Miſtreſs to go firſt: ſhe could not forbeare laughing, to obſerve how complemental and ceremonious at that time I was. Having ſcattered my fear by reſolution, How do I abuſe my ſelf, ſaid *I*, and with that boldly went on.

By this time a light was produced, and then thoſe Bug-bear thoughts which darkneſs poſſeſſeth the fancy withal, began to vaniſh. There was not a hole big enough to contain a man, but what I *prob'd*. Deſcending the Cellar-ſtairs, *I* there

plainly ſaw the Original cauſe of our fear and diſtraction, hanging by the tail. I called my Miſtreſs to the ſight, and now the Maids too would be Spectators, underſtanding the danger to be overpaſt.

Well, the general vote was, that the Cat ſhould be carried up ſtairs to our Maſter, and ſhew him the *wound in his Tail*, for evidence to prove his guilt in being ſeduced by *fancy*.

He hearing ſome come up, thought we were all deſtroyed, and that they were coming up to diſpatch him too: Wherefore he cryed out, Save my Life, and take all I have. His wife (not to encreaſe his perplexity) bid him quiet himſelf, there was no harm, nor any like to be done; and withal ſo convinced him of his folly, both paſt and preſent, that he had not a word to ſay in his own defence; he enjoyning us all ſilence, we were dimiſs'd.

The next night, to ſhew how much he was altered from his former temper and belief, he did lye in his Chamber aforeſaid, ſuppoſedly haunted, and that ſame night with much joy, my Miſtreſs and *I* renewed our pleaſures.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVIII.

How his Miſtreſs ſupplyed him with money, even to ſuperfluity; what ways he had to ſpend it. He is tempted to deſtruction by Correctors (alias) *Clippers and Coyners* (alias) *Matter-men.*

I Found my Eſtate to encreaſe abundantly, for I was half ſharer my ſelf with my Maſter; my Miſtreſs ſhe put in for one too, which I had likewiſe; ſo that the good man received but the *fourth.* I had been (ſince my return) very ſparing in my expence, having laid up my money ſecurely: But now finding out another *rich Mine*, I thought I ſhould be too rich, unleſs I contrived ways to *draw out* as well as *put in.*

In the firſt place, I thought good to buy a brace of good Geldings, for by that means I could meet whom I pleas'd, though a dozen or ſixteen miles diſtance, and ſo by the quickneſs of return come home undiſcovered: If occaſion ſhould ſerve, they might very well ſerve for the *High Pad.* Theſe I bought, and where they ſtood, I had four or five ſeveral ſuits, either to Ride withal, (uſing variety that I might paſs *incognito*) or to wear when I did intend to appear ſplendidly to peculiar friends; and then the Prodigal himſelf did not ſpend his mony more profuſely than my ſelf.

I judge it unneceſſary to relate how, and in what manner I diſburſt great ſums, ſince there are few that are addicted to pleaſure, and have money, but know how to lay it out to the ſatisfaction of their deſires, that is, to pleaſe all their ſenſes. My Miſtreſs ſeldom ſaw a piece of Gold in her Husbands hands, or ſome large and great piece of Silver, but ſhe would be begging it of him, for no other intent but to give it me; which ſhe took delight in, withal, knowing that frequent preſents very much ingage the affection.

My Maſter ſeldom denyed her, (for, like a Cuckold he doted on his Wife) but if he did, ſhe would take pet, and would not eat, have the forehead bound down with a croſs-cloath, look pitifully, and the like. If he askt her what ſhe ailed, or what ſhe was troubled at, ſhe would ſay, at nothing more then your unkindneſs, and then weep bitterly: for, like a right *Hypocrite*, ſhe had *tears at command*. The *Dotard* would *melt* too, ſometimes the great Calf crying and ſobbing, like a Childe that hath loſt his Bread and Butter: Then to make his attonement, he muſt procure her two or three pieces; if he hath them not in the houſe, otherwiſe it ſhall coſt him as much more wealth on the Doctor, of whom ſhe would often pretend to take Phyſick, but it ſhould be onely rich *Cordials*, *ſtrengthning Jellies*, with ſuch like *Provocations* to *Venery*.

For my own part, I was not idle in the mean time, laying up like the careful Bee for Winter. We returned great ſums of money every day, which an acquaintance of mine knew very well; and

and he being daily in the company of a fellow, who was both Coyner and Clipper, it ſeems a decayed Goldſmith, undone by the ſtudy of Chymiſtry, but now lived by ſome particular part thereof, as the tranſmutation of Metal, or ſo forth.

This man he informs that he know a young Caſheer, that he thought he could work to their purpoſe, who was very well qualified for it. An appointed time for meeting was agreed upon between them, which was made known to me; I thought of no other deſign but to be merry. Being met, we drank ſtiffly, but ever and anon the ſtranger would beſeech me to favour him with my future acquaintance, that he ſhould think himſelf very happy, if I would admit him into a familiarity. I could do no leſs then promiſe ſo much, and ſo laying aſide ceremonies, we entered into a very familiar diſcourſe. But for that night there was nothing propounded, neither was it thought convenient: ſeveral times we met, (not without great expence) ſo that now we were grown intimately acquainted. Our diſcourſe hapned on a time to be about Chymiſtry, I was forced to be mute, as not underſtanding any thing thereof; yet I could not but admire, to hear any new friend relate what admirable Rarities he could perform in that myſterious Art, and thereupon ſhew'd me a piece of Gold, demanding my opinion, what I thought of it? I told him I could judge no leſs, but that it was what it ſeem'd to be; he ſmilingly reply'd, No wonder that this ſhould deceive you, ſince it will do the like to the moſt critical Goldſmith about the Town: No doubt, ſaid he, you have heard of the Philoſo-

Philoſopher's Stone, and what vaſt Eſtates ſome have miſ-ſpent in the ſearch thereof, how ineffectual the labour of ſuch hath been, the miſerableneſs of their condition makes apparent. Others & not a few have pretended they have obtain'd the maſtery thereof, for no other intent then to delude ſome wealthy credulous perſon, making ſome ridiculous experiments to confirm his belief, and at laſt extract him to the very lees of his Eſtate. I ſhall not deludingly pretend to any thing, but what I will perform, which your own eyes ſhall atteſt. Hereupon, he ſhew'd me various pieces, both Gold and Silver, which are the effects (ſaid he) of my own labour and pains, imployed in an Art I have found out by the curious ſearch and induſtry of my brain, with which I can convert Copper into that Metal which current money is compoſed of, either of which, according to the Tincture I ſhall give it. And to be plainer with you, out of that great love *I* have born ever ſince *I* firſt ſaw you, & that my actions ſhall make it apparent, ſee here this piece, according to the term of Art given, it is called a *black Dog*, with *Queen Elizabeths Head* thereon, which is only Pewter double waſhed. This here is a *George plateroon*, being all copper within, and only a thin Plate about it. Another called *Compoſitum*, which is a mixt Metal, and will both touch and cut, but will not indure the fiery teſt. He gave me the ſight likewiſe of pieces of *eight*, *half pieces*, and *quarter pieces*. Then again (ſaid he) our own Coyn we uſually call *Engliſh* Cloth, the other *Spaniſh*; the prices whereof are ſeveral, according to their goodneſs and fineneſs: The beſt you may have for 15 *ſh.* the yard, *i.e.* five ſhillings

in

in the pound profit; the worser for eight, ten or more.

Now to the intent that *I* may compleat your happineſs here, if enjoyment of Wealth will do it, *I* would adviſe you to take ſome of every ſort, and ſo mingle it with the reſt of your good caſh, proportionably to the ſum. Let me add one thing more, if any large money comes to your hand, lay it aſide for me, which after *I* have corrected a little (for *broad brimd Hats are not now in faſhion*) *I* will return it, allowing you 18 pence *per* pound intereſt.

I gave him all this while great attention, without the leaſt interruption; but he here making a ſtop, *I* thought he expected my replication; which was to this effect, That *I* thankt him cordially for his reſpects, which I beleeved were real, having uſed that freedom with me, that *I* did not in the leaſt queſtion the greatneſs of profit that would redound by the acceptance of his proffer; but it being a matter of the greateſt conſequence & higheſt concern, *I* deſired *I* might have ſome time for conſideration This anſwer made him look blank, fearing leaſt *I* made a demur only to betray him, ſo that *I* ſaw by his countenance, he wiſht he had been more ſparing in his expreſſions. I muſt needs confeſs, *I* trembled all the time I was in his company, wherefore I made all the haſt I could to be gone, giving him to underſtand, that, after ſerious conſultation with my ſelf, I would ſend him an anſwer by my friend, and ſo I took my leave of him. The whole night following I ſpent in weighing his Propoſals in the ballance of profit and preſervation: I quickly found that Life's preſerva-

tion

tion outweigh'd all other intereſt, and that honour, riches, and pleaſure, would avail little to that man that was riding *Poſt* to the *Gallows*. Beſides, how could I expect to eſcape better then others, who were frequently made wretched ſpectacles of raſh imprudence and folly, who, having forfeited the Kings high and juſt diſpleaſure, did uſually betray their own ſelves to the Severity of the Law in that caſe; which hath as little Commiſeration on ſuch as on the worſt of Offendors? Though I had committed ſeveral things that might come within the verge of an Indictment, yet I always ſhunned ſuch actions as bore the inſcription in their front, *Memento mori*. To be as good as my promiſe, I ſent my Chimiſt theſe conſequent Lines.

SIR,

You ſeemingly do proffer fair, but know,
Hanging attends ſuch kindneſſes you ſhow.
The hope of profit tempts me; loſs of Life
O'repowrs perſwaſions, and ſo ends the ſtrife.
Had I two Lives, my deeds ſhould make it known,
How little I would care to hazard one;
But having ſolely one, I will not try
Its loſs; as yet I have no mind to die.
Should we proceed then, and be taken in it;
Death and damnation ſeize us in a minute.
Ceaſe then, and let your fancy's ſuit with mine.
We'l plot no Treaſon, *but to get good* Wine:
That being had, let each man's face declare
Th' Indian Mines *are not ſo rich as ours are.*
If we want Coyn, the beſt way, I ſuppoſe,
Is to tranſmute the Metal *of my* Noſe.

I

I never receiv'd any answer to what I wrote, neither did I ever see my new friend after, which was according to my own desire, but I heard of his sad destiny, whereof I should have participated, had I listed my self in that Mettle-simulating Regiment. Some found out operating in the obscurest thickets of woods; others were detected clipping in dark Concaves on *Black-heath*, and their Ring-leader discovered in his own house, in a deep Vault befitting his purpose; who, though he had timely notice to remove his tools, yet, by his Seizers they were found hid in a Chimny-mantletree, hollowed to that intent, with a shutter at the end. After the dismal catastrophe of these Hazardous fools, I had like to have been put to a great trouble, though not in the least guilty of the accusation: and thus it was; an indigent Hanger-on, having taken notice of my being once or twice in the company of the chief of those lately executed, came to me one Evening, and requested some private discourse: I consented: being together (laying aside several Formalities that ushered in his discourse) he told me, that I was taken notice of as a notorious disperser of Counterfeit money, and that there was a warrant out to apprehend me, &, that out of pure love to a man so young and fairly promising as my self, he thought himself bound in duty to preserve if he could, by giving timely notice to shun that, which, if neglected might prove destructive. I immediately saw the *Rogue* peep through the Vizard of dissimulation, and therefore instead of giving thanks I gave him a blow over both the eyes, to the intent he should not

not ſee how *I* would beat him, which was in ſuch a manner, that he could not ſee himſelf for three days afterward. This fellow I underſtood to be a Dunner for the Priſoners of their confederates abroad; and if they would not continually let down their milk, impeach them, and were often condemn'd.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

He breaketh his Maſter (by the help of his Miſtreſs) and ſo ſets up for himſelf with that money he had unlawfully gotten in his Apprentiſhip , and credit beſides : what a trick he ſerved his Maſter at laſt: his Maſter and Miſtreſs ſoon after dy'd.

BUt to proceed, now I had ſerved my time, and was accordingly made free ; but ſollicited by my Maſter to ſtay ſome longer time as a Journeyman , which I conſented to , knowing it could not be long : for we had ſo purloined from him, that it was impoſſible for him to ſubſiſt any longer. His Creditors viſited him dayly , ſo that now his whole time was taken up in ſtudying fair promiſing words to ſatisfie them for the preſent , and tell them when they *ſhould come again.* My Maſter perceiving the danger he was in, would neither ſtir abroad, no, not ſo much as come into the Shop. He now ſtanding upon the brow of a very high Hill, and being forced to deſcend , I reſolved to ſave him the labour , and ſo threw him down headlong.

By this time I had conveyed away a ſufficient quantity of his Goods , intending them for my own uſe; and ſtowed them in a Warehouſe which I had

had lately taken privately for my purpose. My Master one night told me his intended design, that he was resolv'd to pack up all his Goods, and to gather in what moneys he could, and so take his wife with him for *Ireland*. I thought I should have dy'd at first when I heard him talk of carrying his wife with him, and could not forbear dropping some tears; which he perceiving, his trickled down his Cheeks to bear mine company. Well now, said he, I see thou loveſt me too, as well as thou hast hitherto proved faithful. But the deareſt friends muſt part (& with that he wept again like a child) however my comfort is, I hope we shall see each other in Heaven. I thought with my self, I had rather see him in the Counter. And from that minute I contriv'd how I might effect it: For at that time I should never have been able to have brookt a separation between my Mistress and self, especially at so great distance. She and I often consulted what to do; Sometimes we were in the mind to take what money the *old fool* had, and so run away together, with many stratagems which we propounded; but were rejected as no ways expedient nor convenient. At last I resolved on this; that she should acquaint her self of the exact time and way he intended to go, and so inform me thereof. I receiv'd information in a short time after, that before break of day, at such a time he would take Horse at *Islington*, and so for *Westchester*. I immediately sent away word to one of his chiefeſt Creditors, making known to him the sum and substance of every thing, and, that if ever he expected to receive what was due to him, he must at such a time have Officers ready to way-lay him,

in

in order to his arreſt, which was punctually done according to what inſtructions I ſent him in a letter, without a name ſubſcribed thereunto. He had not been long in cuſtody, before I was ſent for, to adviſe with him what was beſt to be done in this his great extremity and perplexity. I could do no leſs then ſeemingly condole his misfortunes, and withal ſeemed to be very active as to his aſſiſtance, running up and down to his Creditors to bring them to a compliance; but he had been better to have ſent ſome perſon elſe as ſollicitor in his buſineſs, for by my means I made his wound incurable. Seeing there was no remedy but patiently to endure his inevitable impriſonment, he got an Horſe (as ſome men term it) alias a *Duce facias*, and ſo remov'd himſelf to *Ludgate*, where he had not been long e're he dy'd for grief.

In the mean time my Miſtreſs had ſecured what he had, which I enjoy'd. I had now an Houſe and Shop of mine own, very well furniſht; but withal I was grown ſo deboiſt and profuſively laviſh, that I ſeldom was at home but at night, & then in bed with my Miſtreſs, who was very importunate with me to marry her: I confeſs I loved her intirely as my Miſtreſs, or Whore, but I hated her as my Wife, knowing very well that if ſhe would be an whore to me, and have an Husband, ſhe would be ſo to another when I was in the formers place. She now found her ſelf with Child; whereupon (taking *upon her my duty*) ſhe dayly preſt me to ſave her Credit. But I delay'd, putting her off continually with ſpecious pretences, which her love & facileneſs eaſily ſwallow'd. The time of her delivery approaching, I went down into the

Country with her; and becauſe it was at hand, I ſtay'd to ſee the event: Within a ſhort while ſhe fell in labour (now becauſe we were known for no other then Man and Wife,) when her throws came upon her, ſhe would not let me ſtir out of the room. Her pain growing intolerable, ſhe called me haſtily to her, and getting my hand within hers; Farewel, ſaid ſhe, I die for thee; thy laſt unkindneſs in not performing thy promiſe, and not returning love anſwerable to mine, hath untimely yielded my days: with that ſhe groaned, and then uſing her former expreſſions, cryed out, Love my memory however, ſince *I* die for thee. She uttered not one word afterwards, being as good as her word: The good women looke ſtrangely on me, every one paſſing their verdict, and all concluding her none of my Wife. The *firſt Chriſtians* under the great *Perſecution* ſuffered not in 500 years ſo many ſeveral ways, as I did in five hours by the peoples Tongues. I muſt needs ſay, I took it very much to heart that Report, which made *Richard* the *Second* alive ſo often after he was dead, ſhould kill me as often whilſt alive; deſiring them at laſt to wave their Cenſures (which they expreſt publickly) I intreated them with all the Rhetorick I could produce to indeavour the reviving of my Wife, which if paſt recovery, to uſe means to preſerve the Child. In a ſhort time they told me that was dead likewiſe. At firſt I ſhowed much grief, which was unfeigned, being not ſo much afflicted for the loſs of her, as affected with thoſe words ſhe uttered when ſhe breathed her laſt. I was too conſcious of my own guilt, and therefore they made the deeper impreſſion in my very Soul.

But

But all these perturbations of mind I dissipated with a glass or two of Canary, which was the common antidote I us'd against care, sorrow, and vexation, &c. I now provided things necessary for her Funeral, which were not vulgar; which I might the better do, having made my self her Executor before, taking all she had into my custody. In memorial of her and her fidelity, I wrote this Epitaph on her Tomb-stone.

Women they say will lye, but now I see
'Tis false, to th'last she spake the truth to me.
Farewel said she, I thought my grief t'have hid,
I die for love of thee,---- and so she did.
Here with her lies her Child, that strove in vain
To untomb it self, to be intomb'd again.
But rest my babe, thy cares with life are gone,
Thou'lt rise again, *though now a setting Sun.*
Though wonders cease, thy Mothers death doth prove
They may revive, for she did die for love.

CHAP. XX.

His credit becomes suspected by his exorbitant manner of living in Drinking, Whoring, Gaming, &c. He thinks to sawder up that crack by Marriage; he is deceived both in Person and Portion.

REturning to my own Habitation, I found that my so long absence had raised a jealousie in my Neighbours breasts, that I was run away;

which rested not there, but spread like a *Canker*, so that this flying report came to some of my Creditors ears, which made them both impatient and importunate with me for their moneys; I wondered whence proceeded their unexpected haste. Some that would not be put off with promises, I was forced to pay; from others I obtained a little longer forbearance, which gave me but liberty to prosecute my former courses. If *I* was at the Tavern, I was either drunk, ingaged in a quarrel, & so involv'd in blood; or else at play, if not at a Bawdy house, which places *I* could not refrain from frequenting, though *I* kept one *of my own at home*. For *I* would not entertain a Maid, but what was more then ordinarily handsom, whom I commonly vitiated either by presents, or promises if *I* got them with child. When I was weary of one, *I* payd her off with some additions to her wages, & entertain'd another, who would in a short time be wrought upon as well as her predecessors, being ambitious to lie with her Master, and vainly hoping that to be the first step to her preferment, thinking of nothing but presently marrying, and so be Mistress. In three years that *I* lived as a Mr. *I* had nine illegitimates, which I knew, four whereof were begotten of my Maids, which put me to a vast expence. Two of the Mothers would have forced me to have married them, or allowed them competent maintenance (for they were subtil cunning baggages) had *I* not by a wile got them aboard a Vessel bound for *Virginia*, and never heard of them since. Besides two or three terrible Claps, which cost me a considerable sum in their cure. This distemper, as it caused a *consump-*

tion

tion in my Pocket, ſo it impaired my wonted ſtrength, and almoſt ſpoiled my natural Talent.

I now began to be ſenſible of my folly, and ſo reſolved to take up in time, and redeem by degrees my loſt credit by a temperate ſober life; but that *I* found *I* had waſted my ſelf extreamly, by which means I became leſs capable of reacting what I had before done, and my mind in a manner ſatiated, I queſtion whether I ſhould have had now ſuch penitent thoughts. For a while I kept my Shop diligently and conſtantly; I would not drink with any but at home; my ſudden alteration made people admire, and the ſuddenneſs of my reformation was the common diſcourſe of all my Neighbours: The Parſon of our Pariſh hearing of my ſtrange alteration, came to me, which *I* admired at; for before, he that had the leaſt care or reſpect of his Reputation, would avoid all occaſions of being ſeen in my company, leſt they might be ſuſpected extravagant and deboiſt.

Pares cum paribus facilime congregantur.
Birds of a Feather will flock together.

The ſhortneſs of his hair declar'd him a member of the *Circumciſion*, but his *triple cap*, or three *caps* on his head, ſhew'd, though he hated the very name of *Rome* or *Babylon*, yet he lov'd formerly a whore *in private, though common.* His Cloak was fac'd down with *zeal* before, and his Band appear'd but as a *broad hem*, to ſhew that a *hem*, with *two or three formal ſpits*, or a feigned Cough, was the uſual ſupply of his diſcourſe, when he had *thraſht* himſelf in his *Cloak* out of breath in the *Pulpit.* His looks reſembled the *bleer-ey'd Printing* at *Geneva* (and his

face like that ſort of ragged paper on which they work off their impreſſions. After he had ſet his face into a Platform, he delivered himſelf. I ſhall not relate exactly his own canting words, or what he borrowed from Scripture, being ſenſible, *non eſt tutum ludere cum ſacris*: but give you the ſubſtance, which was firſt a reproof for my extravagancies: ſecondly, ſome general inſtructions, (pick-out of a common-place Book) for my future practice: and laſtly, ſome encouragements drawn from various motives to proceed (without looking back) toward a good life: on which three points he ran diviſions ſtrangely, till Dinner-time, and then his ſtomach petitioned him to ſhut his mouth, leſt it ſhould be deprived of its appetite by receiving in too much air.

In this ſeeming ſtrictneſs of life I lived two or three months, and now ſome began to have charitable thoughts of my Soul; & that I might regain my ruinings out by future diligence & induſtry.

I had ſeveral Matches offered me, which I ſaw, but liked them not; for I had always been a general lover, and could not now come to particulars. At laſt it was my misfortune to ſee one, whom I was willing to; and which at firſt ſight robbed me at once, both of my ſelf and good company. Formerly I was pleaſing and affable, deſirous and deſired of good ſociety, but never lived till now an *Anchorite* on earth. Neither did I ever till now tie up mine eyes to one particular face, giving them free liberty to wander. But now at laſt I fell from my primitive liberty, loſing it totally, by dotage on a Creature, and that a Woman too: a juſt judgment on me for my manifold

fold ſins, to throw this thing in my way for me to ſtumble at.

CHAP. XXI.

How he was married, and what kind of thing his Wife.

I Made ſtrict enquiry after the condition of my intended Wifes Parents, and found by report they were very wealthy. In a ſhort time we had conference together about the Portion, and my Eſtate, and therein we were all ſatisfied. My Courtſhip was very Noble, yet not prodigal, for fear of giving offence; and in a little while we were married. By her looks *I* thought her ſo modeſt, that an unchaſte thought durſt not enter into her head, ſince all immodeſt expreſſions ſhe baniſhed from her ears.

The firſt night *I* thought to have had the firſt *taſte*, but my experience told me the *Tarriers* had been there before. This ſtruck me into an amazement, that there ſhould appear ſuch Virgin-whiteneſs, & the extract of innocence in her face, yet be guilty of a crime ſo notorious. Much perplext *I* was, but durſt not vent my ſelf, what was more then bare ſuſpition. In one half years time what *I* intended to conceal could be hid no longer, being brought to bed three months before her time; and yet the Bawd her Midwife would make

me believe this was uſual; and that Children brought forth at ſix moneths might live.

Now began our domeſtick Civil Wars, which was carried on with ſuch fury between us, that there was hardly an Utenſil in the Kitchin that could reſt in quiet for flying about our ears continually. My Wife acted the *Silent Woman* to the life, whileſt in a ſingle ſtate; for before we were married all her anſwers were very ſhort, comprehended within the two Monoſyllables of *I*, and *No*; and thoſe two muſt be forcibly extracted from her. But now her tongue wagg'd in a perpetual motion, and her voice ſo ſhrill and loud, that it would be heard diſtinctly, though a piece of Ordnance were diſcharged near her at the ſame time, or ſtanding at the Bell-room-door whileſt the Bells were ringing. Frequent were her complaints to her Father and Mother, which alienated their affection from me, ſo that their only ſtudy was how to be rid of me. Her ſorgeries (to excuſe her own *Devilry*) had ſo inſtigated them, that they ſought my ruine by all wayes imaginable. Beſides, they laid an *Imbargo* on the reſt of my Wives portion unpaid; adviſing her withal to ſecure what ſhe could, for her own ſelf-preſervation. She followed their inſtructions ſo exactly, that in a ſhort time I found my ſelf in a very declining condition, yet knew not the cauſe till it was too late, conveying away both my goods and money, ſome whereof went to ſupply the neceſſities of her Stallion.

I was all along jealous of this, though I could not conclude her altogether ſo culpable. But my doubts and fears which of all are the ſharpeſt paſſions,

sions, could not turn this distemper into a disease (although they lookt through false Opticks, making things appear like evening shadows, disproportionable to the truth, and strangely longer then the true substance) till knowledge hereof (confirmed me by the witnesses of my eyes) had banisht bare suspition.

Which was thus, One night I caused my self to be brought home by a Porter as dead drunk; my Wife received me in that condition (I perceived by peeping out of my eye-lids) with much satisfaction, and was immediately carried up to bed; with much difficulty they undrest me, pretending my self asleep all this while, and so they left me. It seems by the story that my Wife presently sent away the Maid (which was her Pimp) to her friend to come at such an hour. About nine of the clock the Maid was posted to bed; and about ten I heard one small knock at the door: he needed not to knock there any longer, for there was one below that was ready to receive him. When I judg'd they were incircled in each others arms, (which I understood by hearkning at the bottom of the stairs, and thereby knew where about they were) I ran in upon them with my Sword (which I had prepared ready) & thinking to have run them through the body, intending to make a passage for their Souls escape, I past my Sword through the fleshy part of both their thighs. At which they made a most hideous outcry, so that the Maid came running down, & a Watchman that stood just at my door hearing the noise, knockt at the door, to know what was the matter; the Maid apprehending the danger, let him in, who by the help of his Candle,

nevr

never saw so strange a sight; for *I* had so pin'd them together, that they could not stir. As well as they could speak, they both begg'd their pardon for their lives only, which *I* granted, as looking on my revenge somewhat satisfied.

My Gentleman *I* dismist, but as for his Mistresi *I* was forced to send for a Chyrurgeon, whose wound needed no probing, but tenting, for it was through and through. There was no concealing of what was done; wherefore in the morning early *I* acquainted her Parents with what had happen'd last night. *I*nsisting further, that since she had instead of putting off handsomly the Chain of Matrimony, rudely broke it, it should be her own damage; neither would *I* be at the cost of a visitation to repair the breach. To which *I* added, that had *I* deny'd her things requisite or necessary, or not performed duly my duty, she might have had some pretence for her slighting me, and look upon me only as a false Crow set up in a Garden, to keep others from the fruit it cannot taste it self. But since it was otherwise, and that she had nothing to object against me, but onely sometimes curbing her inordinate desires; *I* wish them to save me the labour of having the Law to tear her from me, but that they would remove her elsewhere.

They reply'd but little, hasting to their daughters; and fearing worse mischief might ensue, they instantly conveyed her into the Country. She had not remained there long, before she was cured, and not enduring to be confined to solitariness, repaired again to the City, where now she lives, as such do that keeps Civet-Cats; but *I* hear she is very reserv'd to all but such she knows she may intrust her self with.

There

There never yet was Woman made,
Nor shall, but to be curst;
And oh! that I (fond I) should first
Of any Lover
This Truth at my own charge to other Fools discover.

Ye that have promis'd to your selves
Propriety in Love;
Know womens hearts like straws do move,
And what we call
Their Sympathy, is but love to jet in general.

All Mankind are alike to them;
And though we Iron find
That never with the Loadstone joyn'd,
'Tis not the Irons fault,
It is because the Loadstone y t was never brought.

If where a gentle Bee hath fallen
And labour'd to his power,
A new succeeds not to that flower,
But passeth by, (high.
'Tis to be thought the Gallant elsewhere loads his

For still the flowers ready stand;
One buzzes round about,
One lights, one tasts, gets in, gets out.
All always use them, (them.
Till all their sweets are gone, and all again refuse

However, I must confess my own faults, as well as condemn others; which was, *I* was too inquisitive after that which the more *I* knew, would the more disturb me. Of all things the less we know, the better. Curiosity in this renders a man as ridiculous a Coxcomb, as that Cuckold Sir *John Suckling*

Suckling mentioneth, who made diligent enquiry whether he was made ſo in a bed, or on a Coach, and whether his duty-officiating Cavalier pulled off his Spurs firſt or not, *&c.*

Well, it was my hard fate to Marry thus like one doom'd to priſon, who expecting to lie in a private room, is confined to the Hole. Had I married the beſt, I believe I ſhould have found my ſelf in the Stocks.' Tis ſtrange that I of all men ſhould be deceiv'd by this thing that was like a box bearing drugs not ſuitable to the inſcription. Had not my paſſion hung in my eyes, when I lookt into her diſpoſition and carriage, I might have eaſily underſtood that her behavior in the preſence of me was only like action on a publike Stage, and that the evil of her natural inclinations were hid from me under the vail of ſilence and ſeeming modeſty. And indeed my pallate was bed-ridden, and ſo ſcarce ſenſible of ſauce, much leſs of meat. But ſince I have had ſuch ill luck in marriage, which ſome vainly and falſly account a merry-age, I ſhall in the enſuing Diſcourſe give you ſome inſtruction or advice as Land-marks. For having ſplit upon this Rock, I may the better be a Pylot to another that would ſail this way.

CHAP. XXII.

Some Obſervations concerning Love and Women; ſelected out of the choiceſt Commentators on their nature, together with his own experimental reflections.

LOve, 'tis confeſt is a Natural diſtemper, a kind of ſmall Pox; moſt have either had it, or is to expect

xpect it, and the ſooner the better. Surely I was ever well cur'd on't, or elſe I had not thus fallen to a Relaps. Want of knowledge miſguided me firſt, and ſo I fell into a *Quagmire*; but I knew not what poſſeſt me to ride afterward into another on purpoſe. Love-ſeeds when it grows up to Matrimony is good for nothing, like ſome Fruit-trees which muſt be tranſpanted before they will bring forth any thing. And when Love in this nature doth ſeed, the encreaſe thereof is diſſatisfaction, ſorrow and vexation multiplyed. This aforementioned is not truely love but luſt; for I cannot believe that that noble paſſion can be the ruine of its ſubject; neither would I have it diſparaged by ſo unworthy an object as a woman. If there be Love, it ſhould be to Heaven, a male-friend, relations, or our Countries preſervation, and not to a Female-piece of imperfection. And yet nothing will ſerve the turn, but monopolizing it by Marriage, becauſe we would make it ſurely our own, and nevertheleſs our own till then. For if ſhe be young, ſhe is like an Hawk upon her wing; and if ſhe be handſome, ſhe is the more ſubject to go out at check. Faulkners that can but ſeldom ſpring right game, ſhould ſtill have ſomething to take them down. The lure to which all ſtoop in this World, is either garniſht with profit or pleaſure, and when you cannot throw her the one, you muſt be content to ſhew out the other. Conſider again that woman (beſides the trouble) is a Rent-charge which though the curioſity of man hath often incloſed, yet he cannot for his life ſtop ſo well one gap, but it will lie open for any ſtragler, by which

which means it ſeldom improves or becomes fruitful. And why ſhould a woman be denyed the liberty of breaking a pane in her own window, or not admitted the freedom of regreſs to her own ſalliport, letting in whom ſhe eſteems as friends? If you will not give them the permiſſion, you muſt be forc'd to wink when they take it, or do worſe: croſs them, and they will endeavour the not leaving a croſs in your Pocket. Take it which way you will, Marriage is the deareſt way of curing love. Faring with ſuch, as it doth with thoſe for the moſt part that at great charges walls in grounds and plant, who cheaper might have eaten Mellons elſewhere, then Cucumbers in their own Garden. Beſides, it is a groſs piece of ignorance to be bound up to love for an age, when the cauſe of love may periſh for a month, and then the effect will follow. If it be natures plant in the face that doth induce you; thoſe beautiful flowers of red and white, a diſeaſe will quickly wither; if not, raviſhing time will deflowre the choiceſt beauty.

But the ill conſequents of Marriage are more to be conſidered, which are commonly drawn from the evil inclinations of that Sex *Eve* by ſtumbling at the Serpents ſollicitations caſt her Husband out of Paradice; nor are her Daughters ſurer of foot, being foundred by the heat of luſt and pride. It were ſomething if Marriage could anſwer the expectation of all ſhe boaſts the cure of; for inſtead of quenching the hot coals of concupiſcence, it aggravates the ſimple ſin of Fornication, making it ſprout into Adultery. What might be ſaid more as to this ſubject, I ſhall refer the Reader to the

Writings

Writings of that ingenious Gentleman Mr. *Francis Osborne*. If any more (like boys stript and stand shivering about the brink) are ready to leap into Loves Whirl-pit, and so endanger the loss of themselves, let them first look upon Love to be an idle fancy, and Wedlock of a dangerous consequence. If *I* could perswade you from loving, one would think the other then would be disregarded, but some to their costs can speak the contrary. In the first place, marry none but whom you love: for he that marries where he doth not love, will love where he did not marry. If you are prone to love one particular person, some are of opinion that travel is an excellent remedy: For absence doth in a kind remove the cause, removing the object. Others think that frequent visits (whereas the rarity of them indears the affection) may by a surprizal discover some defects, which though they cure not absolutely, yet they qualifie the vehement heat of an amorous Feavor; and as neer at can be, let it be unseasonably, either when she is in sickness or disorder, by that a man may know she is but mortal, and but a woman; the last would be enough to a wise man for an Antidote. Enter into discourse with her of things she daily hears not, and it will confirm the cure. Neither will it be amiss to contrive your self into the company of variety, especially such beauties which are generally cry'd up; and if you can, taste them all, (but now *I* think on't, it is no matter, one is sufficient for a surfeit) for this Malady is better remedy'd this way, then by abstinence: good jovial company will much conduce to the cure.

But

But, I like not the prescription of Marriage, since it is the last and most dangerous receipt; like a kind of live Pigeons apply'd to the soals of the feet, which remedy to say truth, is worse then the disease: Were it possible for a Woman to be constant to one, something might be said, but I never yet tried any which did not very much shew their displeasures when offered some kindness, but never found any to refuse them, if opportunity & privacy of place admitted their reception; which hath made me often in my own thoughts question my mothers honesty and fidelity to my Father.

What I now utter, is not derived from prejudice to that Sex, grounded on my own Wifes disloyalty; but experience tells me this, which most past sixteen very well understand, that there are few Women, let them pretend what they please, but will yeild to the temptations of the flesh, and so much the sooner, by how much she professeth some new light, which is *Ignis fatuus* that leads them into the *Quagmires* of all sorts of erroneous Tenents. With this dark Lanthorn-Light they dazle the eyes of such as would pry into their actions, whiles behind in the dark they sensually satisfie themselves undiscovered.

Experience dictates what I here express; for I have had converse with several of these Religious pretenders, that in the very act would very much inveigh against Adultery with their tongues, whilst their Bloods willingly consented to the commission of that sin, and then immediately after seem extremely pensive.

They will make it their daily discourse, speaking

ing againſt ſuch whoſe natural inclinations have prompted them to unlawful ſatisfaction of their luſts, and yet they themſelves are at the ſame time ſtudying how they may ſecretly and ſecurely accompliſh the ſame thing.

To conclude, Woman in general is the very extract of inconſtancy, and therefore it is but a vain thing for any to think ſhe can abſolutely love one man. Such who are found conſtant to their Huſbands preferring their welfare before the indulging of their own by-reſpects, ought to be lookt on no leſs then Miracles of their Sex, by ſuch who are acquainted generally with Female diſpoſitions and actions.

CHAP. XXIII.

He cheats his Creditors by knaviſh breaking, and runs away for Ireland. *He is Shipwrackt on the Iſle of* Man.

WHilſt my Credit was good, *I* thought good to make uſe of it, leſt that failing, *I* ſhould want an opportunity to march off with flying Colours. To raiſe my repute amongſt my Neighbours (whom *I* knew would ſpread abroad what they had ſeen) *I* caus'd a Porter (whom *I* could intruſt) to carry out privately an hundred pound, and a little while after to come with a truſty friend of mine with that, and five or ſix hundred pound bags more on his back, openly carrying them. Upon my receipt hereof, I pretently tumbled the

Money out of the bag (which had really money in it) on the Counter, purposely making a great noise: having told it over (my friend standing by the while) I put it up; and pretending to lay that aside and take another, I took up the same again, so doing till I had told it over five or six times; then writing in publike view a Receipt, with much civility and respect *I* dismist my Gentleman. And thus did *I* thrice in a months time; so that by this means without suspition *I* conveyed away a great quantity of my Goods, which people thought *I* had sold, & therefore thought me to have a great trade. Report hereby rendred me a man of vast dealing, so that now *I* had goods dayly offer'd me, some whereof *I* received, promising to them payment at three moneths, others at six; whereas *I* intended they should stay till her had her twelve Apostles for her Jury. What Wares or Moneys I could take up, I did, not mattering at what rate. To some of the more wary sort I confest a Judgment for their security. I needed not to have spoken in the Singular number, for I deluded four with my Judgments. What commodities *I* had, *I* converted into money by a bill of Sale, and so went away, leaving my Creditors to sue out a Statute of *Bankrupt* if they so pleased; which *I* valued not, if once out of their reach. To my chiefest Creditor *I* sent these lines, to the intent he should not tax me with incivility for going away, and not sending him word.

Credit doth strengthen such whose Trades are weak;
But too much Credit, Sir, did make me break.
Credit to sinking Trades-men is a prop;

But

But had you kept your Wares, I'de kept my Shop.
Pray do not blame me, Sir, becauſe I ſhow
A way to pay thoſe many debts you owe:
Which you may do, if you'l adviſed be,
Which is in ſhort, prepare to follow me.
Believe me, faithful Sir, in what I ſay,
I went before, but to ſhew you the way:
But if you will not, don't lament your loſs,
For in your Money I do bear the croſs.
Grief will diſtract you, and deſtroy your wit;
Good Sir, preſerve it, for y'ave paid for it.

I rid poſt for *Holy-head* night and day, ſo that *I* arrived there in a very ſhort time: going to diſmount, I tumbled off, neither could *I* riſe again; continual and unaccuſtomed riding had almoſt diſlocated every bone in my body, notwithſtanding it was ſwathed for that purpoſe. The next day *I* made a ſhift to walk abroad to view the Rarities of the Town, but found nothing rare but handſome Women, Civility, and good Drink. In two days time we ſet Sail: we had not ran above three Leagues before the Sky darkned; the Wind blew hard at a South-Eaſt, and the Waves roſe mountain-high: In an hours time we were forced to cut our Maſts by the board, and lightning the Ship as much as we could, let her drive. Every man fell to his Prayers, expecting every moment when they ſhould be ſwallowed up by the Sea. As for my part, *I* now thought divine vengeance had overtaken me, and would reckon with me for all my Rogueries; I lookt on my ſelf as *Jonas*, & was much troubled that others ſhould ſuffer for my iniquities. About three a Clock in the morn-

ning we heard a hideous noiſe occaſioned by the beating of the Sea againſt the Rocks, which was ecchoed by the loud and lamentable cries of the Seamen, who now knew there was no hope for us. Now could *I* pray heartily, that had never pray'd in my life before; but my Devotion was ſoon ſpoiled, for the Ship ſtruck in between two Rocks. *I* lookt out, and methought the daſhing of the waves lookt perfectly like flaſhes of Fire. Here ſhe ſtuck a little while, which gave five of us opportunity to leap out upon a Rock: we were no ſooner there, before a wave fercht her off, but brought her on again, and ſplit her all to pieces. We five in the mean time riding aſtride on a Rock behind one another, like ſo many Criminals on a *Woodden-horſe*. Sometimes a wave would ſtrike clear over us, which indangered our waſhing off. Sometimes we thought to let go our hold, as looking upon our preſervation to be impoſſible; and withal imagining that the tide was coming in. At laſt the hindmoſt could hold no longer, but crying, *Lord have mercy on my Soul*, committed himſelf to the mercileſs Sea. Immediately came a tumbling Sea and waſht off the next; now did *I* expect that every wave would prove my Executioner. But it was not decreed (*I* ſuppoſe) that *I* ſhould be drown'd. Day broke, ſo that we could diſcern we were not a Coits caſt from the Shore, and that the Sea was ebbing. We waited not above an hour before we crawled to Shore, for go we could not, our joynts were ſo benum'd by the cold. We got up the Beach, and could diſcern a little way diſtant a ſmall Cottage; thither we repaired with much difficulty, and were kindly entertained, pittyed, and

and informed where we were. We ſtay'd about a week in this Iſle of *Man*, without one farthing expence. For the Inhabitants are generally very civil and courteous, and eſpecially to Strangers. From thence we imbarkt for *Dublin*.

CHAP. XXIV.

His Arrival into Ireland: *he changeth his Name: what trick he ſerv'd his firſt Landlady; all his Money being ſpent, and thoſe Goods and Coyn likewiſe Shipwrackt which he expected to follow him.*

WE landed at a place called *Ringſend* about a mile from *Dublin*. *I* was askt whether *I* would have a Coach. Where are there any, ſaid I? (for *I* lookt about me, and could ſee nothing like a Coach) the fellow lookt upon me to be a very ignorant perſon, becauſe I underſtood not what he meant, and angerly ſpake thus: *By my Goſſips hand, thou canſt not ſee very much well, arra look here is one by thine own ſide.* It was a great while before I could tell what language he ſpoke, he did ſo tone his words; neither could I underſtand him, till one ſtanding by interpreted him. As for his *Ringsend*-Coach, as he call'd it, it was Wheel-barrow faſhion, only it had two Wheels not much bigger then a large *Cheſhire* Cheeſe: the Horſe that drew this Princely-pygmy-Chariot, I at firſt miſtook for an over-grown Maſty; but viewing him narrowly, found him the extract (by his ſhape) of

a *Scotch-Hobby*; well, up *I* mounted, but could not invent a name for the manner of my riding, for *I* was neither coacht nor carted, but I fancyed my ſelf (and that juſtly) as I was riding, to be ſome notorious Malefactor drawn on a Sledge to the place of execution, which afterwards experimentally *I* found *Dublin* to be: many of its Inhabitants call this City *Divlin, quaſi Divels Inn*, & very properly it is by them ſo termed; for there is hardly a City in the world that entertains ſuch variety of Devils Imps as that doth. If any knaviſhly break, murder, rob, or are deſirous of Polygamy, they ſtraightway repair thither, making that place, or the Kingdom in general, their Azylum, or Sanctuary. My firſt care was to plant my ſelf conveniently; the next day *I* ſent for a Barber to ſhave all my hair off, ordering him to bring me a Periwigg of an abſolute contrary colour to my own hair, to the intent, that if *I* ſhould meet with any of my former acquaintance, they might not know me, whereby *I* ſhould prevent their ſending notice to any where *I* was. The truth of it is, in this diſguize *I* hardly knew my ſelf. The greateſt difficulty I found, was to make my ſelf familiar with my fictitious name. At firſt when my Landlady called me by that name, *I* either ſtar'd her in the face, or lookt behind me, (not anſwering thereunto) thinking ſhe had ſpoke to ſome man elſe: but had I not pretended to be thick of hearing, and ſo that way apologizing for my ſilence, my deſign might have been marr'd. *I* daily met with ſeveral *I* knew, but would not take the leaſt cognizance of them.

In this manner I ſpent a moneth, but all this while no tidings of my Goods and Money; that which

which I had brought with me was all consumed. My Landlady (as it is customary there, having as little trust or faith as they have Religion) called upon me for what I owed her. For a little while I stopt her mouth, by telling her I had a considerable quantity of Goods and Mony too coming, which I expected by every fair wind. A little while after I heard the Ship in which they were was cast away. Now did I absolutely conclude Gods just judgement attended my fraud and knavery. My loss I did not in the least discover to any, knowing I should reap at first only some pitty, and afterwards be undervalued & and disrespected. My Hostess again, was very importunate with me to have her Reckoning: *I* endeavoured to put her off, saying, *I* expected daily Bills of Exchange; but she would not believe me; for *I* perceived that she had been often cheated with such delusions.

Now did *I* not know what to do: *I* thought good to try another way; she being a Widdow, *I* fancyed *I* could work upon her Female frailty: *I* used all means possible to get her alone; which *I* did but seldom, and then did *I* make use of all my Rhetorick to perswade her into a belief, how dearly *I* loved her; she replyed little, but would laugh at me till she held her sides again. *I* verily believe she understood my drift, which *I* might argue from her expressions. Sometimes she would say, Come, come, away with these love-fooleries, and pay me what you owe. Then would *I* tell her all *I* enjoyed, and my self too, were properly hers, and that she might take them when she pleased into her possession. No, no, she would say, my youthfull days are past, and it is time for me to look

Heavenwards; wherefore let fall your ſuit, *&c.*

Since words would no ways prevail, I reſolved to try ſomething elſe, knowing how difficult it is for a Woman when in bed to refuſe a Venereal proffer. To that purpoſe one night I came ſoftly into her Chamber, and groping with my hand for her face, I caught a man by the Beard: at which he awaked, and thinking the Devil was come to trim him, or rob him of his Waſh-balls, would have cryed out aloud, but that fear had ſo lockt up his voice, that his higheſt note was little louder then whiſpering; I could but juſt hear him ſay, *In the name of* ——— *what art?* I am, ſaid I, (and then ſhe wak'd too) no Ghoſt, but a living witneſs of your leachery, to that intent I came hither to be fully ſatisfied of what I have a long time ſuſpected. As for you Madam, *your youthful days are paſt*, but your luſt will endure for ever. If this be your way to Heaven, why were you ſo uncharitable as not to let me go along with you? As for your part, Sir, I believe that you are traveling that way too; for if I miſtake not, you lately came out of Purgatory.

To be ſhort, they both intreated me to be ſilent, and retire to my own lodging, and that in the morning they would treat with me to my full ſatisfaction. This was what I aimed at, though brought about otherwiſe then intended. Early they both came to me: the pious Gentlewoman being very tender of her credit, would forgive me my Debt, if I would not blemiſh her reputation by my report; her Gallant gave me ten pieces to bind the bargain: having gotten a diſcharge under her hand, I ſealed our contract with an Oath and

faith-

faithful promiſe never to divulge their ſhame. The Gentleman (though his eſtate much exceeded hers) out of ſpight, I think, or vexation, to be ſo caught, *incontinently* married her, though all former ſollicitations (which I underſtood were many) proved ineffectual.

CHAP. XXV.

He is driven to extreme neceſſity; he deſcribes what it is to be indigent, by what he ſuffered in that condition.

THis ten pound I received from my old leacherous Dotard, made its *Exit* almoſt aſſoon as its entrance into my Pocket: by that ſum I thought to have purchaſed Mountains in *Ireland* (and indeed there is too great plenty of them there,) by gaming; but experience told me afterwards that my deſign was hazardous, and ſo it proved, for I met with a perſon that *bubbled* me at Hazard, not leaving me a penny, and ingaged beſides for my proportion of the Reckoning. My Gameſter dealt too hardly with me, yet it was but juſt, for I intended to ſhow him as little favour, if compell'd to lye at my mercy, which I verily thought would be, having various Utenſils about me to that purpoſe, but I was overmatcht.

I thought my ſelf ſecure, for I could top,
By which I've forc'd ſome Cits to leave their ſhop.
I palm'd, and put the change upon them too;

I only ſtudyed how I might undo.
But now I'm met with, 'tis but juſt I ſee,
That he which others cheats, ſhould cheated be.

I returned to my Lodging, (which was none of the beſt) with what anxiety and perturbation of mind *I* ſhall give any looſer leave to imagine, whilſt the remembrance thereof enforceth me to ſpeak; and I hope the Reader will give me that liberty, ſince the Proverb intaileth on the looſer that priviledge. I acquainted my Landlord with my misfortune, who ſeem'd very much to condole me for the preſent, but it was afterwards the occaſion of his not crediting me. From hence I will adviſe all to ſpeak as little as they can of ills that betide them; but we cannot diſcourſe too much of the good that happens to us. Perceiving my Landlord grew cold, my ſpirit was too high to be any longer beholding to him but for my Lodging; wherefore I ſeldom came home till night. Neither would I make known my condition to any that knew me. Sometimes I ſhould meet with ſome in the ſtreet, who would ask me to drink with them: my uſual anſwer was, I came from it but even now: inſiſting farther, that ſuch a Gentleman, with two or three more beſides my ſelf had drank ſo much, and that I admired at my ſelf, for being ſo ſober; whereas to deal ingeniouſly, I had not drank one drop that day. Another ſeeing me, would ask me whether I would dine with him at the Ordinary? then would I pretend that my Lord---- Gentleman over-perſwaded me to dine with him, and that we had ſuch variety, that I doubted my ſtomack had received ſome detriment there-

thereby; and therefore beg'd an excuſe; whereas a dry cruſt taken out of my *Leather Cupboard* was all the varieties the *Gentleman-Uſher* of my ſtomack, my throat I mean, had taken cognizance of that day. So hard it was too, that I would look this way, and that way, not daring to commit it to the engine of my Chops, unleſs there was none near me within a furlong; for had there been any near me, they would have ſworn I was eating Walnuts ſhells and all. Now did I learn to drink Water, which neceſſity made me to commend as the moſt ſoveraign liquor, and moſt ſuitable to the body of man; otherwiſe *Adam* in Paradice would not have been without a cup of Ale.

Every morning I offer'd up my Devotions either to St. *Patrick*, or St. *James*, each of which have two excellent Wells dedicated to the honour of their Saintſhips. Thither did I repair conſtantly twice or thrice a day: after I had offered up the fumes of ſmoke (moſt commonly of none of the beſt Tobacco) I kneeled, not uſing the common way of drinking out of the chained iron diſh, but with greater adoration ſuckt it as it came through the conveyance. After a walk to *Kilmanum* (about a mile from *Dublin*) or ſome other place to prepare my ſtomack, I return'd to *Chriſt-Church*, frequently dining there with Sir *Richard Strang-bow*: Reflecting on his Cheer, and the Liquor of thoſe two Saints, I cannot but tell you my thoughts of both.

Sir Richard Strang-bow *keeps an houſe where Wine*
And Bread ſome ſup on, but few ſeldom dine.
Ask yet an hungry Rambler, and he'll ſay,

(*Though*

(Though not one bit came near his mouth that day)
He plentifully din'd with him, ſo let him ſtill
Till he hath found his empty belly filt,
Where I ne're could, which made me hate in fine
Sir Richard Strang-bows *Feaſts, St.* Patricks *Wine.*

I faſted ſo long, *I* had now almoſt forgot how to eat: for if caſually *I* came where meat was, I often made a proffer to convey ſomething to my mouth, but my lips underſtood not my meaning; for having been ſo long unaccuſtomed to their duty, knew not how to perform their *gaping* office. It was impoſſible at this time for the greateſt fright to have made me foul my breeches, becauſe I ſeldom uſed any thing that might cauſe excrements. And therefore I wondred to hear any enquire for an houſe of Office, ſince I had now left off going to ſtool. Once in five days I thought I ſtood in need of evacuating; but I was miſtaken, for by diſcharging a blaſt of wind (whoſe fury ſcattered ſmall ſtones underneath me) I found it only a fit of the Cholick. I ſhall deal plainly, ſhould I have found a propenſity, I would have been very unwilling to let any thing go out, ſince ſo little paſt into my belly. Some *Moveables* I had left, which I was forced to diſpoſe of, to keep the paſſage of my guts open, which would frequently grumble againſt my ſtomach for detaining too long what was received, challenging a propriety therein. I thought it good policy not to buy any Belly-timber of a quick concoction, becauſe it ſhould ſtay the longer within me. To this purpoſe I lookt on old Cheeſe to be food convenient; knowing that though it will diſgeſt any thing elſe, yet it cannot

diſgeſt

diſgeſt it ſelf; and as it cloſeth up the mouth of the ſtomack, ſo by its reſpective quality it locks up faſt the Poſtern of the Micro-coſm. Fleſh again (if I got any) I would ſwallow by whole-ſale, fearing leſt by chewing it, my ſtomack would too ſuddenly give it a paſſport to my *Hypo-gaſtrium*; by which means it would be immediately ready again, nay reſtleſs in the craving more. I ſeldom ſlept for the gnawing of my ſtomack, & the anguiſh of my guts, and for want of thoſe fumes which proceeding from Meat aſcended into the head, and ſo the cauſers of ſleep. If I chanced to nod at any time, I dreamed of nothing but eating, my fancy feeding that while as voraciouſly as an hunger-ſtarved hound on a ſhoulder of Mutton. I was driven to that paſs, I could not juſtly tell whether I was alive or not. Sometimes I was of the opinion that I dyed in our Ship-wrack on the Iſle of *Man*, and that I was now a Soul in Purgatory.

Immediately after my arrival in this place, the Itch and *Bunniah*, or Flux, (the two grand Epidemical diſtempers of *Ireland*) gave me their welcome into their Country, attended by a great number of ſix-footed Gent. clad in a gray livery, with one ſingle liſt down the back; who all promiſed to ſtick to me & be my boſome-friends, neither would they forſake me as long as life laſted. But they like the reſt of the beſt and faireſt promiſing friends left me, when fortune committed me priſoner to the mercileſs cruel hands of that accurſed Goaler, Poverty. I was grown ſo lean, that the Mungril *Scotch* and *Iriſh* Gentleman the Itch, finding not fleſh enough to feed on, gave me the *French* Complement, *Adieu pouvre Gentilhome.* The Flux

ſtand

ſtaid with me as long as any thing was left in my belly, but finding no ſubſtance from my Guts, took his leave alſo, unkindly carrying away all that was within me. Their retinue perceiving they were like to feed on hard meat, there being little left but bones, whoſe teeth were incapable of faſtning thereon, reſolv'd to follow after; ſome making more then ordinary haſte, broke their necks off the Cape of my Cloak, miſſing their footing, the threads thereof being ſpun out by time as fine as thoſe of *Arachnes* working.

To conclude, *I* was a meer walking *Skeleton*, my skin only ſerv'd as a mantle for my bones. But for wind, my belly would have contradicted an approved Philoſophical Axiome, proving a *Vacuum*.

One time paſſing by the Caſtle-gate, a Souldier fir'd his Muſquet, and I proteſt methought my belly ſounded like a Drum at the report. Should *I* relate every particular wherein the malevolencie of Fortune afflicted me, *I* ſhould much tire the Reader, as well as perplex my ſelf with remembrance; wherefore I ſhall deſiſt, and give you leave to imagine the deplorableueſs of his condition, who hath neither Monies, Friends, nor Credit, and in a place where he is neither acquainted with the people, nor their Language.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVI.

He falling accidentally into a ſtrange houſe, endeavours to build a Sconce, but is fruſtrated of his intent. The old Hoſteſs pities him at firſt, and relieves him, and continually after feeds him for her own peculiar Diet; further inſiſting on the miſery he then endured.

I Was by this time grown ſo feeble by faſting, or by the manner of my feeding, which was either Cheeſe or hard Eggs, (there being great plenty) that I could hardly go; and ſo light *I* was by continual ſmoking, that *I* queſtioned often whether *I* was not a meer fume my ſelf; fearing ſtill when *I* walkt abroad, to be extracted by the Sun for an exhalation. Fortune ſo favour'd me one day, that *I* found a Groat, which put me into an extaſie of joy. *I* know not what Magical power there was in that vaſt ſum of *four pence*, for in an inſtant, not knowing by what means, *I* found my ſelf in a Victualling-houſe, ſo ſpeedy was my conveyance, as if *I* had been riding ſome *Dæmon* through the air. *I* call'd for ſome meat, but my voice ſounded ſo hollow, as if *I* had ſpoken in a vault. Some ſaid, it was the *Eccho* of ſome perſon ſpeaking in the next houſe: others of the wiſer ſort believed me to be ſome *Spectrum*, or Apparition; and that the Devil had aſſum'd a body ſpeaking in that *mortuum cadaver*.

ver. The truth of it is, 'twas ſomething hard to determine, whether I ſpake or no, but that they might perceive my lips to open. There was a Phyſician in the houſe at that time, who looking on me narrowly, openly proclaim'd that I was the workmanſhip of ſome Mortal, who having firſt gotten the Skeleton, or bones of a Man, had artificially skin'd them over, and that German Clock-work caus'd my motion. I would have laught heartily at their ridiculous apprehenſions, but that I had forgot how. I had ſome Gall left in me ſtill, which made me ſtart up in as great a rage as my feeble body was able to declare, intending to demonſtrate to them how groſly they were miſtaken; but perceiving me to approach, they all fled but Mr. Doctor, whom ſhame retain'd, otherwiſe by a fit of an Ague (which juſt then poſſeſt him) I knew he would willingly have been gone too. *Speak* (ſaid he tremblingly) *what art?* I was ſomewhat puzled at his queſtion, for I knew not well what I was: I am a living man, ſaid I. *Why then thou wouldſt have fleſh*, ſaid he. After ſeveral diſcourſes to this purpoſe, I at length made him partly believe that I was no ſuch thing he imagined. And yet he would be asking me ſtill a many impertinent queſtions, as whether I could ſee; and his reaſon was, becauſe he could diſcern no eyes. Whether I was born without eyes, or loſt them ſince accidentally, *&c.* *I* was forced to tell him at laſt that it was the Country diſeaſe that had reduced me to this condition. Hearing me ſay ſo, he pitied me much, and told me he would fetch inſtantly ſomething that ſhould do me much good. *I* thankt him, and away went Mr. Doctor.

The

The good Woman over-hearing our diſcourſe drew neer then confidently, and demanded what I would have ? *I* told her, any thing which was eatable, as far as a groat would go. She brought me ſome hot Meat, and ſetting it before me, went for ſome drink, but before ſhe could return I had ſwallowed it all: ſhe fetcht me more, which went the ſame way with as much celerity. But like Quick-ſilver it wrought quite through me, not ſtaying a quarter of an hour.

The manner whereof was thus: About to pay my Reckoning, my Groat got into a piece of paper; I fumbled a great while in my pocket, but found it not, which put me even to my wits ends. At laſt drawing out ſome papers, and ſhaking them my Groat dropt; perceiving its fall might be dangerous, there being many holes in the Floor, I catcht after it; notwithſtanding it fell upon the very brink of an hole; what with haſt to recover it, and the fright the danger put me into, I diſcharged my ſelf of every bit I had eaten. There was no body could ſay, I had fouled my Breeches, or that I ſtunk; which I made appear to my Landlady by ſhowing her what I had evacuated, but little differing from what I had eaten a quarter of an hour before. The good old woman perſwaded me ſtrongly to eat it again; for ſaid ſhe, it cannot be much the worſe for juſt paſſing through you, and I will fry it if you pleaſe. I thought I ſhould now have dyed with laughter at her ſtrange propoſition; but the woman ſtar'd upon me, not knowing whether I grin'd or laught. Well, well, ſaid ſhe at laſt, if you will not eat ſuch good victuals,

ſome body elſe ſhall. I offer'd her my Groat, which ſhe refus'd, telling me there was as much more to pay; I told her that was all the moneys I had about me, and that I would pay her the reſt the next day.

But ſhe for her part thought it was unjuſt,
To liſten to the arguments of truſt.

And therefore told me plainly ſhe would have her Reckoning. I bid her ſtay a while: then aſſoon as ſhe had turned her back *I* attempted to march off, but my ſtrength failing me, *I* wanted ſwiftneſs, and ſo was brought back. *I* made her acquainted with my condition how miſerable it was; *I* needed not many arguments to perſuade any into that belief, for my perſon was the true Embleme of miſery. She gave a ſerious attention to what I expreſt, and at laſt melted into tears, commiſerating my misfortunes; ſhe caus'd inſtantly a bed to be warm'd, where being laid, ſhe ordered a Cawdle to be made, & in fine ſhew'd a world of kindneſs to me, not imagining what ſhe aim'd at. She would not let me ſtir out of my Bed but whilſt it was making, for above a week; at the concluſion of which *I* began to recover a little colour in my cheeks, & grew indifferent ſtrong; ſhe gave me moneys in my Pocket, & told me I muſt walk into the fields with her. I bleſt my ſelf, and that Angel that directed my feet to the finding that loſt groat which was the occaſion of my reſtitution to a condition of living again. By this time I imagined what my old Gentlewoman expected: wherefore, in the firſt place I acknow-

acknowledged how much I was obliged to her matchleſs civilities, and that it was impoſſible for me to return her anſwerable ſatisfaction. Rowling her pretty Piggs-eyes to and fro in her head, *I* require (ſaid ſhe) nothing but your Love. *If* it muſt needs be ſo (thought I) there is no way better then to let fancy form her beautiful, and ſo by the force of imagination I ſhall injoy as much pleaſure as if lying with *Venus*, though in Conjunction with this *Succubus*. We us'd not many ceremonies, (like puling-whining Lovers, that are always ſaying Grace, but never fall to) but taking the convenience of a Ditch underneath a buſhy-topt hedge we conferred notes. Had any ſeen us in this poſture, they would have concluded old Winter metamorphoſed into an old Woman lying in a Dike, and that *Flora* was converted into a young man, and both in an unnatural Conjunction. Or that youthful *Phœbus* had contracted his rays to court a lump of Ice, but with ſhame was forced to deſiſt, finding his powerful endeavours ineffectual in the production of a thaw. Whenever *I* wanted a ſmall ſum, a kiſs or two, or the ſaying I loved her, extracted ſo much as ſupplied my preſent occaſions; if I wanted a ſum conſiderable, why then a quarter of an hours diſcourſe in private effected my deſires. Moſt that knew me wondred what politick ſtratagems I us'd that I ſo ſuddenly wound my ſelf out of that Labyrinth of all ſorts of miſeries, & that I appeared both in feature and garb ſo excentrick to my former condition. *I* had as many pretences to blind the world as there were various ſuſpitions of pragmatick

matick perſons. In ſhort, I was now very well apparell'd, well furniſht with moneys, I kept my Horſe, nay my Whore too; this I made uſe of for what ſhe was, the other for what ſhe had. So ſeemingly happy was the preſent ſtate of my life, that I deem'd it impoſſibly unalterable by any decree of fate.

CHAP. XXVII.

He makes a Ramble into the Country, takes ſome Obſervations as he travelleth; and is ſoundly beaten for attempting to board a ſmall Iriſh *Pinnace.*

I Began now to be ſomewhat weary of the City, and therefore reſolved to refreſh my ſelf with the Country Air. I acquainted my Patroneſs therewith; who with much regret condeſcended, conditionally two days ſhould be the utmoſt time of my abſence.

That morning I ſet forth, there was ſuch ſolemn leave taken between us, as if my voyage had been intended for the *Indies*. About to amount, ſhe retrived my intentions, claſping me in her arms; I ſhould rather have choſen the imbraces of a ſhe-Bear, as thinking her breath far ſweeter; and truly I have often wondred at my recovery in ſo impure and unwholſom air. Being on Horſe-back ſhe ſo bathed her Cheeks with tears (wanting no moiſture, derived from an everlaſting ſpring of humours diſtilling from her head) that you would have

have ſworn ſhe was the repreſentation of the Pig-woman in *Ben's Bartholomew*-fair. Had not her watry Flood-gates drowned her eyes, I think ſhe would have ſtood looking after me that way I rid till my return. Well, there is no fool like the old doting fool: And were I again to love for intereſt, I would chooſe ſuch a perſon. Your young skittiſh things that only mind their pleaſures, think they have done a man a courteſie that merits reward, if they admit him into their private familiarity, becauſe they find fond man ſo paſſionate and impatient in the proſecution of his deſires: And then again, having variety of Courtiers, they are too ſenſible, that if one will not meddle with the bait, a ſecond will nibble at it ſo long till he is caught with the hook. Whereas a woman ſtricken in years, and having loſt her beautiful allurements is diſregarded, & lookt on as no fit ſubject for love to treat on; not but ſhe may have as youthful deſires as any; and if that way inclin'd, none ſo prone as ſhe. For knowing ſhe hath nothing but her wealth to attract withal, ſhe will freely part with it for her ſelf-ſatisfaction; and that ſhe may not looſe her Stallion, conſtantly encourage him even to the exhauſting of what ſhe hath. Moreover, finding the man to anſwer her expectations, ſhe ſtudies all ways imaginable how to pleaſe him in every thing, that he may pleaſe her in that one thing.

But to my purpoſe: coming to *Balle-more-Euſtace*, a little beyond the Town, (which is in the County of *Wicklow*) there is a ſmall River in the Summer-time not above knee-deep; I perceived a young woman about to croſs it; drawing to the

water, ſhe ſtood not on the niceties of modeſty, but pulled up her Cloaths to the waſt. The ſight hereof ſtopt me, and as near as I could oppoſite to her. She minded me not, but came ſtraight over to me, and at about three yards diſtance let down her Coats. I obſerved ſo many excellencies that my blood began to boyl, and my fleſh was all of a flame. For her hair which naturally curled, and was plaited, was of a bright flaxen, each hair in the Sun glittered like a thred of Gold.

Here take notice by the way, that the Maids for the moſt part, Winter & Summer, go without any coverings on their head, which they waſh all over every night; the meaner ſort aſſoon as married wear Kerchers. She had an Angelical countenance, onely ſomewhat browniſh by the Suns frequent kiſſing of it; *I* know not whether *I* may adjudge that a deformity. The skin of her body might vye with Snow for whiteneſs, *&c.* I diſmounted, & addreſt my ſelf to her in *Engliſh*; ſhe anſwered me in her own language, *ſhe underſtood me not*: Then did I make uſe of that little *Iriſh* I had learned, which were ſome fragments of lecherous expreſſions, to which ſhe replied, but I underſtood her not. To be brief, I ſo far prevailed that I got her into a ſmall Wood, in which the thick & ſpreading tops of the trees ſeemed to lay their heads together in conſpiracy to keep not only the Suns entry, but alſo the curious ſearch of any mortals eye. She permitted me to kiſs, dally, lay my hands on her thighs, *&c.* which were the only Preludiums of what ſhould follow. But herein *I* miſtook, for their diſpoſitions are much different from the *Engliſh*. We uſe to

ſay

ſay, that where we gain over any woman the liberty to uſe the hand, we cannot fail of doing what we moſt deſire: whereas quite contrary they will without the leaſt oppoſition permit the firſt, but with the greateſt difficulty admit of the laſt. For aſſoon as ſhe ſaw me ready to engage, ſhe cryed out inceſſantly, *Whillallalloo*; and preſently I could hear this ululation ecchoed. *I* had juſt recovered my Horſe, when two or three fellows came running to me, the one with a Flail, the reſt with long Poles. The firſt ſalutation *I* received was from the Flail, which failed but little of doing my buſineſs: the next my Horſes Crupper received; the poor beaſt being civilly bred, could do no leſs then return them a Congee with his leg, which made one of them fall on his knees to his Maſter, as if he had been Monarch of that Soil. Theſe two Rogues ſtood ſtiffly to me, inſomuch that *I* knew not what courſe to take. The Villains were ſo nimble, that one of them was continually before me hindring my flight, whilſt the other drub'd me forward. I bethought my ſelf of a Piſtol *I* had in my Pocket charged without a bullet; *I* drew it, preſented, and pretended I would fire if they deſiſted not; for theſe ſtupid fellows apprehended not the danger: perceiving how ſtupidly ſenſeleſs they were, *I* fir'd it full in the face of him that fronted me, who verily believ'd he had been ſhot, & ſo out of conceit (for they are naturally very timerous) fell down as dead; the other ſeeing that, ran away as ſwift as lightning, whereby *I* had leave to ride on, which *I* did (you may think) with no ordinary ſpeed. Lovers may talk of their ſufferings by their

Miſtreſs frowns, or obdurateneſs, but let any one judge of mine by the blows I received; ſighing is nothing to fighting, and a few tears are not to come in competition with dry baſting. Pox on them they made me out of conceit with love for ſix weeks after. I never thought of enjoying a woman ſince; but the remembrance of thoſe three Bog-trotters converted the hot fit of my amorous Fever into a cold one.

A little way from *Baltinglaſs* I took up my quarters for that night. The Inn I lay in was one ſtory high, about the height of an extraordinary Pigſty, and there was one Chinney in it too, more then there is to be found in one of an 100 ſuch Hovils. The good man well-com'd me after his faſhion, but I think an *Anthropophagus* or *Indian* Man-eater would have done it as civily. *I* bid him ſet up my Horſe by ſigns, (for that was the language we converſt in) but alaſs there was no other Stable but what was at the end of our Kitchin; our Dining-room, Bed-chamber, Pigſty, Pantry and Buttery, being all one, without diſtinction or ſeparation. Some few Wattles (as they call them) were placed above, that was our Hay-loft. The onely door of our Inn was a large hurdle, much like a ſheep-pen. The *Bannettee* or good wife of the houſe, could ſpeak a little broken *Engliſh*. *I* askt her what *I* ſhould have for Supper? *Thou ſhalt have a Supper ſaid ſhe for St.* Patrick *a gra.* *I* ſtaid an half hour expecting when ſhe would lay down ſomething to the fire, but inſtead thereof ſhe brings me in a Wooden Platter a great many Leeks, in the bottom whereof was a good quantity of Bay-ſalt, and withal

withal a loaf as black as if the Meal had been wetted with Ink. *Seeſt tou tere, Chreeſt himſelf nor St.* Patrick *did ever eat better ting.* I could not forbear ſmiling, which put her into a great paſſion: For if a man eats not what they ſet before him, they think themſelves highly affronted. Becauſe I would pleaſe them (not knowing but that I might find as bad ſawce here) I pretended to eat, conveying it into my Boots. After ſupper I askt them for a clean Pipe; the woman brought me one about an inch long, telling me it was very clean, for her Husband had not ſmoakt in it above ten times. *I* judged it to be the ruines of the firſt *Pipe* that was made, which was conveyed from one of that famility to another, conditionally they ſhould conſtantly ſmoke in it without burning it. They offered me ſome ſnuff too; which is one of the greateſt kindneſſes they can either ſhow or be ſhown. I called for ſome drink, (to try whether that correſponded with the reſt) and ſo it did, for there was no ſwallowing it without chewing. Finding but little ſatisfaction *I* deſired to go to Bed. That *I* ſhould inſtantly, they ſaid, but *I* wondred where they intended to lay me. In a little while in came a luſty wench with a bundle of ruſhes on her head, my bed it ſeemed by the ſequel, which ſhe ſpreading on the ground, covered them with a *Caddow* or Rugg. Here *I* muſt lye or no where, patience was my onely comfort; wherefore ſtripping my ſelf to my drawers and Stockins, *I* laid my ſelf down. About two hours after came in two Cows, three or four *Piggs*, ſome Ducks and Geeſe, (which they brought not in before, out of civility to me.) All their family being within

within doors; the good Man, his Wife, and two Daughters, ſtripping themſelves ſtark naked, lay down altogether by my ſide, which ſeem'd ſomewhat ſtrange to me. *I* could hardly forbear the two young ones, but that my late misfortune was ſo freſh in my memory.

I could not ſleep all that night, wherefore very early *I* diſcharged my Reckoning, and ſo ſet forward for *Dublin* with all the expedition *I* could, not liking the Country-entertainment. *I* would not ride the ſame way back as *I* came, to avoid my bone-breakers; but it had been as well; for coming to a River that *I* muſt foard, *I* askt a fellow which was the ſafeſt place: he pretended no knowledge of what *I* ſaid, wherefore making ſigns to him, he anſwer'd me again with his hand, directing me to ſuch a place; at the firſt ſtep my Horſe and *I* plunged over head and ears; and had not my Horſe been ſtrong, we had both periſhed. With much difficulty we got up the bank on the other ſide, and looking behind me, the villain was e'ne almoſt out of ſight. Such cauſeleſs revenge they frequently exerciſe towards the *Engliſh*, naturally hating us with a perfect antipathy. *I* returned at length to my old Hoſteſs, reſolving when next *I* undertook ſuch a journey, *I* would ſteer by the compaſs of other mens experience.

CHAP

CHAP. XXVIII.

The manner of his ſtealing an Hogſhead of French *Wine from the Cuſtom-houſe.*

TRacing the ſtreet, *I* chanced to caſt my eye on a fellow, the ſlowneſs of whoſe pace informed me of the idleneſs of his condition. His garb was ſo prepoſterouſly unſuitable, that a man could not poſſibly look on him without exceſſive laughter. To the intent you may participate with me in the ſame ſport, *I* ſhall open his Wardrobe. *In* general there was not any thing he did wear that had not ſome times another property, & of which one might derive another Pedigree. The Hat he had on was deveſted of all Royal Dignity, having loſt its Crown, and yet his crime would not be allowed of as Capital. But what it wanted in one place was ſupplied in another, the brims whereof being ſo large, they might have conveniently ſerved as a Pent-houſe for another beſides himſelf. But this ingenious Squire politickly had pin'd up the brims on one ſide, that he might have ſome light to diſcern his way; his Hat thus pin'd up on the one ſide looke much like a trap-door pull'd up. His Band was ſo torn and dirty, as if he had but juſt come from ſome fray; and leſt paſſion ſhould prove obnoxious, time had done him that courteſie to purge away his choler. In what condition his Doublet

Doublet was behind, *I* could plainly diſcover through the holes of his Cloak, which generally was ſo tranſparent, that the rents and patches of ſeveral colours of his cloaths were as viſible as if you had lookt through Lawn. The forepart of his Doublet and his Breeches *I* am confident were the off-ſpring of the Furniture of a Billiard-Table. His Cloak proceeded from a Boat-tilt, whoſe Grandfather was an Horſe-cloth; and *I* could not look on his Breeches, but it put me in mind of the *Scotch* Flaggs that hung up in *Weſtminſter*. His skirts were ſo liquor'd and greas'd, that in caſe of extremity they might have ſerved for belly-pieces, not uſing any thing but their own fatneſs to fry them in. By his countenance he ſeemed like a man of courage and ingenuity, and ſo *I* could not chuſe but endeavour his relief. Wherefore *I* accoſted him, pretending *I* had ſeen him ſomewhere, but could not for the preſent call to mind the place. His neceſſity made him aſſent to whatever *I* ſaid; and deſiring his company to an Ale-houſe, he readily granted my requeſt. By what unhappy accident he became thus miſerable, *I* know not, but the man was well furniſht both with natural and acquir'd parts. Having had various diſcourſes of ſeveral matters, and that we began to be familiarly acquainted, *I* askt him why he rapt himſelf up ſo cloſe in his Cloak? *O Sir*, ſaid he, *(to be plain) I have a maim'd Doublet, and I have heard ſome ſay, there is nothing more prejudicial to a wound than the intromiſſion of Air*; which that Network garment of yours (ſaid I) will never be able to keep out. He replyed, *'Tis true, Sir, I find it ſo, but I wiſh it were a Net, for then I might employ my ſelf by fiſhing.*

I

I was ſo well pleaſed in my new acquaintance, that (bidding him ſtay there till my return, which ſhould be ſpeedy) I went and procured him all things neceſſary for to cover his nakedneſs; the laſt thing he put on was his Shoes; finding them to have Soals, they added new life to him.

Having thus caſt (Colt-like) his ragged Coat, I was not aſhamed to walk with him in the ſtreets; coming to the Cuſtom-houſe we ſaw ſeveral Pipes and Hogſheads of Wine. Viewing all the places belonging thereunto, ſaid I, Methinks it is no difficult matter to ſteal one of theſe Hoſheads, had I but aſſiſtance. You ſhall not want mine, Sir, (ſaid he) even to the hazard of my life, which I ſhall never look on as a ſufficient requital for this ſingular favour you have now conferr'd on me. Having walkt there a while, we went down to a place called *Lazy-hill*, where I found out two or three pure Rogues more, one whereof had a Boat. I informed them of my deſign; they willingly promiſed their helping hand, and the time appointed for the effecting our intentions, was that night about twelve. Accordingly we all met, and having procured an empty Hogſhead, we fill'd it with water, and away we went in the Boat. The tide ebbing had left dry ground underneath the Key, where I planted three of our company, inſtructing them that aſſoon as they found the Coaſt cleer above, they ſhould with ſlings (which they had for that purpoſe) leave the Hogſhead of water, & exchange it for one of wine; which done, they ſhould march off immediately. I and my new Comerade marcht up the Cuſtom-

houſe

houſe ſtairs, where we encountred with two old Watchmen. They askt us what our buſineſs was, we told them we had no other deſign but to drink with them, having been a little frolickſome the other ſide the water. The old Watchmen were very joyful at this news, and ſo giving one of them money to fetch ſome drink, the other carried me to the Lodge. The drink being come, they minded that ſo much, they had forgotten their duty; & I plyed them ſo cloſe with whole ones, that they were incapable of holding one more: in the mean time my Comrogues were gone, pretending our boat was a drift: we took our leaves; Being five of us concerned, we ſcorned to ſell our Wine, but contracting with ſome to find Sugar, with others *Weſtphalia hams*, or ſuch like reliſhing meats, and with others to be at the expence of Muſick, but every one to be at his own charge for Wenches; we never gave over ranting and roaring till we had dreined the Hogſhead dry.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIX.

His Landlady dyeth, and ſo is left again to live by his wits; his Comerade is hanged, with ſome hints of his deſperate, irreligious, and atheiſtical tenents.

IN the height of our jollity, word was brought me that my Landlady was dangerouſly ſick, and that ſhe deſired to ſpeak with me inſtantly; thinking it was onely a fit of lecherous and ſalacious itch, I made no great haſte, but at length I went: Aſſoon as I entred within her doors, I received the ſad tydings of her death. I ran up ſtairs (not believing this report, becauſe I would not have it ſo) but found it too true: viewing her as ſhe lay, I perceived her hand faſt clincht: I took it into mine, and wrenching it open, there dropt ten pieces of Gold, which I conceive ſhe intended to have beſtowed on me whileſt living, as her laſt Legacy. I conveyed them privately into my Pocket, and preſently made enquiry how ſhe had diſpoſed of her Eſtate; but I received little or no ſatisfaction herein, only to my great vexation, I heard ſhe often to the very laſt called much upon me.

I ſtayed not above two or three days in the houſe, but *I* was forced to leave it.

I met with my obliged friend, to whom *I* communicated my late misfortune: he like an experienc'd Stoick counſel'd me to bear my loſs patiently,

ly, since that is below a man to repine at any sublunary casualty, much more to sink under the burden of any vexatious cross, or remediless loss. We discoursed what expedient we were best to take, and to encrease our small stocks by some witty exploit. We propounded many things which we approved not of. We thought of turning High-way-men; but I diswaded him from that, by informing him that money was very scarce, and that men of 500 *l. per annum* usually travelled 30 or 40 miles with a single *Cob*, or piece of eight, not so much for fear of robbing as for want of Coyn; and that is the reason that all sorts of provision are very cheap, because there is so great a scarcity of that should purchase them. Why then said he, there is mony enough in the Exchequer. But said I, it is so difficult to come at, that I will not hazard my life in the attempt. Hearing me speak in this manner, he lookt upon me in derision: saying, *That fear was a passion unworthy to be lodg'd in the Soul of man, and that there is nothing here which a man either should or need to fear*, Secundum Religionem Stoici : *And that man deserved not the fruition of the least happiness here, that would not, rather then go without it, venture his neck.*

We had so hot a contest about this, that we parted in anger, and never saw him afterwards till I heard of his condemnation, which was occasioned by the prosecution of what he propounded to me. Two or three more besides himself combined to rob the Exchequer, but were apprehended in the enterprize, committed, arraigned at the Bar, convicted and condemned. Hearing hereof, I gave him a visit in Prison; expressing much sorrow for what

what he was to suffer; but he onely laught at me for my pains. I desired him to be more serious, since three days would put a period to his life, and then he must give an account to his Creator of what he had done on earth, and that though we might sooth up our selves in all manner of debauchery here, yet without cordial repentance we must suffer for it hereafter. Prythee, said he, do not trouble thy head with such idle fancies. That there is a God I cannot, nor will not deny, since there are Regiments of Arguments levied both from the stately fabrick of the arched Heaven, and from the inimitable embroidery of the flowry earth which are sufficient to conquer that infidelity, & render men tributaries to the all-forming Essence. But that this God should be so unjust (who is all goodness) as to to make the intent of my Creation, damnation; it shall never come within the verge of my belief: if there be any punishment from criminal commissions, it must be annihilation or nothing. Quote not me the Scriptures for my conviction if I erre, since they are full of contradictions, & contain many things incredible. Neither do I know (since we are forbidden murder) why *Abraham* should kill his Son *Isaac*, and the same person commit Adultery with his maid *Hagar* (which is largely describ'd) & yet we are commanded the contrary; if we borrow or steal, we are enjoyn'd to make restitution; notwithstanding, the *Israelites* were permitted to borrow the *Egyptians* Ear-rings without giving satisfaction. In this manner I could cavil *ad infinitum*; and yet this Book is the Basis of Christianity. Let me tell you plainly, Religion at first was only the quaint *Leger-demain* of some strong pated Statesman, who to over-awe

the Capriciousness of a giddy multitude, did forge the opinion of a punisher of all humane evil actions. What was *Mahomet* but an Impostor? whose palpable cheats grew up in his successors into a Religion, & whose inventions were & are receiv'd with as much adoration by the wisest of men, as is the Orthodox Veneration (as they term it) to a Deity, which is the object of Christian worship. The Popes piety is only pride and ambition, and yet he pronounces Damnation against all such as are not of his belief, *&c.* If you will know the diversity of Religions (all oppugning one the other) take a view thereof in Mr. *Ross* his *Pansebeia.* Now seeing the rational Soul hath fail'd so oft and so absurd in its discoveries, how or why should we submit our selves slavishly to its determinations? For that which doth at sometimes erre, can never at any time be concluded infallible.——

He would have proceeded, But I desired him to desist; which request of mine made him bid me be gone and not to trouble him; which I willingly did not imagining him to have such good parts, and withal not having so much understanding in Christianity as to confute him by argument, but I hoped his own Conscience would perform that office when he came to the place of Execution.

The day being come, I resolved to see the final end of my friend. And there did I enjoy the fruits of my hopes and wishes. For as soon as the Halter was about his neck, he roared so loud with his voice, that it could not but awake the most lethargick conscience that ever the Devil lull'd asleep. There I might see and know by the urinal of his eyes, and the water standing therein, what convulsion-fits his Soul suffer'd, his own mouth confessing

ſeſſing how grievouſly his diſeaſed Soul was ſtretched upon the rack of deſpair : then it was that the voluminous Regiſters of his conſcience, which did formerly lye claſpt in ſome unſearcht corner of his memory, were laid open before him; and the Devil, who hitherto gave him the leſsning end of the proſpect to ſurvey his licentious courſes and damned opinion, now turn'd the magnifying end to his eye, which made him cry out at laſt; For the merits of thy Son Jeſus Chriſt whom I have deſpis'd with thy Holy Scriptures, have mercy on my ſoul; and ſo was turn'd off.

CHAP. XXVI.

He paſſeth for a Batchelour; Courts ſeveral under the pretence of Marrying them, by which he perſwades ſome out of their Maiden-heads, others out of their Money, with which he goes for England: *At* Cheſter *he cheats his Landlord, where having all things requiſite to compleat an Highway-man, he followeth that trade; he is met with by ſome of that gang, who intending to rob him, he diſcovers his intentions, and they admit of him into their ſociety.*

BEing left now to ſhift for my ſelf, having loſt the main prop that ſuſtain'd me in all conditions, I addreſt my ſelf to Courtſhip. Beauty was not the mark I aimed, the purchaſe thereof producing little profit, ſince it ſelf is moſt commonly the ſole reward; neither can a man attain to it but by great expence, outvying all therein, leaſt any interpoſe. Either wealthy and aged widdows, or

thrifty Maids, who had laid up what they had gotten in Service as a bait to procure an Husband, ſuch did I daily hunt out and viſit them by turns. I was not ſparing of amorous expreſſions, ſhowing therein the height of zeal. By which means I deluded ſeveral. Some I was forced to give earneſt to for their Commodities, before they would truſt me with what they had. This courſe I followed till I was generally taken notice of for a grand deceiver. Having now gotten a round ſum of money by me, I borrowed whereever I could: ſo croſſing St. *Georges*-Channel and landed at *Cheſter*. I took up my quarters in a very graceful Inn, and gave out immediately that I had an hundred head of Cattel coming. The Maſter of the houſe taking notice of my extraordinary Garb, and believing the report which I had caus'd to be ſpread abroad lodged me with much reſpect in one of the beſt Chambers of his houſe.

The Wind favoured my deſign as much as I could deſire, for it blew Eaſt-North-Eaſt, by which no Shipping could come out of *Ireland*. One day I came to my Landlord, & telling him that by reaſon of the non-arrival of my Cattel, I was diſappointed of Moneys, & therfore I deſir'd him to lend me ten Pounds, & he ſhould ſatisfie himſelf in the firſt choice of the beſt of my beaſts when they came, and ſwore to him I would perform my promiſe to him upon the word of a Gentleman. So that without any ſcruple he lent me the mony. Being Market-day, I bought an excellent Gelding with Furniture thereunto belonging, with Sword and Piſtols, and in the Equipage mounted, I took my leave of my credulous Landlord, without ſpeaking a word to him. I had not rid far before three

three well mounted rid by me, (I found them afterwards to be the Van-guard) having as many more in the Reer. At the bottom of an Hill they before faced about, and bidding me ſtand, thoſe in the Reer reinforced the Van. One of them clapping a Piſtol at my breaſt, commanded me forthwith to deliver, Swearing three or four full mouth'd Oaths. I told them I was or would be one of their ſociety. They examined my Pockets, and finding ſtore of Coyn, they demanded how I came by it. I invented a lye to their general ſatisfaction; which was, I had met with a Booty a little before I met with them, which was the occaſion of my being ſo well furniſht; but that which confirm'd them moſt, was my being ſo well provided with Piſtols in my Holſters, Pockets and Boots. Inſtead of doing what they intended, they were then of another opinion, and all of them careſt me in a very high manner, reſolving to be merry at the next Inn, and there to admit me as a Brother.

Having ſet up their Horſes, they went into a Room before, I ſtayed ſometime after for the benefit of eaſing nature; coming in among them I thought my ſelf miſtaken in my company, and made a proffer to go out again; but they laughing heartily, called me back. I knew not one perſon, for they had pulled off their falſe Beards, Vizards, Hoods, Patches, Wens, Muffles and Perriwigs, together with thoſe other diſguiſes that obſcured the natural proportion of their faces, ſo that they appeared as other men. Come ſaid the chief (as I gueſt him to be by the ſway he bore over the reſt) you are a freſhman, and therefore want ſome of our inſtructions, which in due time you ſhall receive from us. In the firſt place it is fit that you

take an Oath, which every young Thief muſt obſerve that is admitted into the Brother-hood, or at his inveſtation into the honour of one of the Knights of the Road: which was to this effect, Firſt, they read a charge of ſecrecy, that what ever misfortune happened to clowd their freedom by rendring them as an object to Juſtice and Law, they ſhall conceal their Complices to the death, or againſt any other jeopardy whatſoever, burying in oblivion, not only his Confederates, but alſo his manner of entrance into this way.

And further, they proceeded to ſwear me, that if the Judges ſhould preſs me to a diſcovery of particulars, that then I muſt cunningly create ſome men in my fancy, deviſing not onely Names, but to each man a particular feature, deſcribing their ſtature, complexion and age, as alſo their dwelling place. Still provided that the place of their abode be far enough off. And then before enquiry be made, the danger of the trial may be over or paſt; and then again this pretended diſcovery may purchaſe favour from the Bench.

Further, if I ſhould be examined, why, and how I fell into theſe courſes, I muſt then tell them that I was born a Gentleman, and well educated, but being a younger brother, I had not wherewithal allowed me for a ſubſiſtance; and rather then I would live beneath my birth, or diſparage the ſtock from whence I came (here fetching a deep ſigh, and looking very ſadly) neceſſity conſtraining me to ſupply my wants, I fell into theſe wicked courſes; which will make them think you are ſome miſled young man whom temptations had drawn aſide, and ſo cauſe them to take pity of your condition; and if their mercy extend to the

remiſſion

remiſſion of your guilt, it ſhall not only wreſt you from the puniſhment of the Law, but from the perſecution of your paſt evils.

By this means we may have liberty to fall to our old courſes; nor muſt conſcience trouble us, but diſpence with every impiety, and glory in the greateſt iniquities, counting him moſt honourable who is grown the oldeſt and moſt exquiſite experienced practitioner of all manner of vice. Much more was committed to my memory for future obſervation, which for brevity ſake I ſhall omit.

CHAP. XXVII.

Some Inſtructions given me by our Grand maſter-Thief.

COmpoſing his Countenance, and looking very gravely, Come my new and young Knight of the Road, be ruled by me whoſe long experience makes me able to command, and my love to you willing to inſtruct you. Ever lurk or lie in ſome by-place moſt advantagious and leaſt ſuſpitious, which yields the eye the proſpect of the Road; ſo ſtrictly view the Booties, that other mens misfortunes may enrich your condition, and the honeſt mans loſs be your gain; and be ſure you draw every advantage that may promote your cauſe to the longeſt extent. For your Masks and Chin-cloth, thus muſt you place them, and fit them at a moment to diſguiſe your faces, thereby to blind the intellects of ſuch as by conſtraint pay tribute to your wants: who then can know & with conſiderate heed directly ſwear you are the man, when

theſe artificial Vizards are withdrawn, and ſo the viſible tokens vaniſh that might inform mens knowledge, what you are, and that your words may have a different ſound after your voice, that ſo as your habit, face, and hair obſcure your diſcovery; your ſpeech (reputed undiſguiſeable) will add to your concealment and ſecurity.

Be ſure you ingeniouſly contrive a Watch-word to your ſelves that may occaſion no ſuſpition; as we are like to have a fair day or a foul, according as the weather is like to prove, which being nam'd let every man fall to his work, thoſe that are ſtrongeſt at the graſp, and have hearts accordingly, let them ſeize firſt, always duly obſerving this, to catch the bridle by the left hand, and with the right draw your Sword. If he or they reſiſt, the one prevents his flight, the other cuts, and ſo cools his courage. The weaker ſorts charge is to bid ſtand, and confronting his Horſe's head, preſent a Piſtol fit for to diſcharge. If they deny delivering patiently what they have, but contend, you muſt wave all niceties, but cut them ſoundly; if that will not qualifie their fooliſh preſumption, be ſure you fire not without doing Execution, and then with what ſpeed fly, after you have with expedition taking the pillage of the field.

If you are purſued by an Hue and Cry, obſcure your ſelf in ſome place or other, and let it paſs by you, and then to be ſure it will never overtake you. If a Prize comes by, or in your ſight, if up the Hill meet him, if down follow cloſe at the heels, and having more in company then your ſelf, let each man ſingle out his choice which he likes to deal with, the coaſt being clear fall up all to your cloſe order and ſide, be ſure that you jointly ceize

your

your prize. But here observe let not any baseness of spirit unman you. For (*speaking to me*) nature hath bestow'd on you the full proportion of limbs and seemest a man of courage, suitable to the largeness of thy manly size, but be not surprized with fear or cowardise if the assailed boldly assaults thee.

Full fraught with the Documents which I received from my old experienced Master, I resolv'd upon some atchievement; between two and three in the afternoon I my self with four more set out; we planted our selves in a convenient place, only I was sent out for a discovery, not rightly understanding my trade, I wandred too far; but in my digression I met with a single person whom I bid stand, which he would have done, and as willingly have surrendred his purse, but that he was mounted on a stone-horse, I on a Mare. Assoon as I had given the word, his stone-horse wheel'd off and came in the rear of me; I thinking he intended to crupper me, endeavoured all ways imaginable to prevent him, for there was something it seems under my Mares tail more powerful, which at that time I dreamt not of, I led him round and round several times circularly, the poor harmless Gentleman fearing he should provoke me too much by delays, the unrulineſs of his Horse hindring my seising the Booty, cry'd out worthy Sir, take what I have and spare my life, at that very instant his Horse reared his two fore-feet upon me and my Mare, insomuch that I thought he said, I'le take both Life and Money too presently; fear had then rendred me so incapable of performing the office of a Thief. With that I put spurs to my Mare, and flew through the air for the procuration of my safety

ſafety. Notwithſtanding *I* made what ſpeed I could the other was cloſe at my heels; ſtriving and kicking with both my legs, one of my Piſtols went off in my Pocket: the apprehenſion of the preſent danger had bereft me of the true uſe of my ſenſe; for I imagin'd that my backfriend had diſcharged at me, which made me roar out for quarter. He on the contrary concluded I fought *Tartar*-like flying, and that I had fir'd it at him, which made him with much eagerneſs eccho out with repetition this expreſſion, *As you are a man ſhew your ſelf merciful.* Sometimes he would ſay, for Jeſus-ſake hold, good Sir ſtop, which made me ride more furiouſly thinking he call'd to the Country, Hold him, ſtop him; at laſt, do what I could, his Stone-horſe kapt up upon us, at that inſtant (by what means I know not) we all came headlong to the ground. *I* expected now that my imaginary adverſary would be upon me, and cut my throat before *I* could recover my legs; wherefore *I* ſtarted up, and found my mortal foe up before me and upon the run. I could have hanged my ſelf to think *I* ſhould be reckoned among the number of men, & yet want that ſpirit & courage which compleats a man; but looſing no time *I* purſued him, and eaſily made my ſelf poſſeſſor of what he had; Sirrha ſaid *I*, if e're *I* meet thee again, and find thee ſo obſtinate, or durſt reſiſt, as now thou haſt done, *I* will tye thee to a Tree in ſome obſcure place, where none can hear thy doleful cries, and there for ſix days thou ſhalt have no other food but what *I* ſhall bring thee. Once a day during that term *I* will viſit thee, and each days Meat ſhall be either a piece of thine own Sword broken into ſmall bits, or thoſe Bullets (which thou intendeſt for the deſtruction of ho-

honeſt men) diſſolved and mingled with Gunpowder, which ſhall be conveyed to thy mouth through the muzzle of thy own Piſtol. It pleaſed me exceedingly to ſee how pitifully & ſubmiſſively he lookt; for verily *I* durſt not have utter'd half ſo much, if he had ſhown an auſtere countenance.

As I was framing a lye to delude my Comrades (when *I* ſhould meet them) into a belief how valiant *I* was, and dextrous in proſecution of that deſign I had newly undertaken, *I* lookt about me, and ſaw them all at my elbow. *I* now believed (which *I* eaſily perceived by their ſtearing looks) that they were all eye-witneſſes of my dangerous encounter. Oh Brother, ſaid one, how is't? are you well? *I* aſkt him the reaſon of his impertinent queſtion? Becauſe, ſaid he, we took notice of the great danger you were in even now, narrowly eſcaped of being ſhot by a Pocket-Inkhorn. Without doubt, Brother, you are very hard-hearted to fly (riding full ſpeed) at the very naming of, *Good Sir, be merciful*; the poor harmleſs ſoul making frequent repetition thereof, but you ſtopping your ears for all entreaties, his Stone-horſe ſeemed to be his Advocate, and to that intent ran after your Mare, endeavouring to court her into an interceſſion for his Maſter.

I ſhould never have ſtopt their mouths, had *I* not ſhewed them what I had gotten, which was not inconſiderable.

It was twy-light as we met with another Prize, which was of a different temper from the former. For though he and his fellow-traveller were (comparatively to any of us) but Pigmies, yet of ſo undaunted reſolution and unreſiſtable courage, that neither threats of death, or torture (I am confident)

fident) could dull the edges of their couragious ſpirits, which might be in part underſtood by their deportment to us, for had we not ſlaſht, carbonadoed, and forceably bound them, rather then they would have yield'd willingly, they would have ſtoopt to death. Our power having ſubdued them, we withdrew them into a ſecret place, leaving them not any thing valuable. Then did *I* learn to ſearch with ſo ſtrickt care, that ſooner might the Grand *Turk* turn *Roman* Catholick then conceal a penny from me; here was *I* taught to be deaf when the poor Traveller cries he is undone; and to be more flinty than Adamant, not to be moved with ſighs or tears. Having ingaged them by Oath not to follow us by Hue and Cry, or by means of a general riſing of the Towns adjacent; theſe two fellows robbed, rifled and amazed, we left wrapt up in woes, and haſted away to ſecure our ſelves.

I ſhall conclude this Chapter with a Relation how I was quit with my Comrades upon the account of fear or timorouſneſs. Neither could they juſtly tax me with it, ſince they are things entail'd upon the profeſſion. For every Crow that flies extracts a fear, and every thing that doth but ſtir, or make the buſhes ruſh, ſeem'd to our fearful fancy a Conſtable to apprehend us for our theft. I cannot forget how ſtrong a confuſion aroſe among us by a trifle, the means were ſo ſmall, and the occaſion ſo ridiculous, that when ever after *I* thought theron (though by my ſelf) *I* could not forbear laughing and condemn the timerity of ſuch minds ſo meanly ſpirited. 'Twas thus in ſhort: An Owle who to gain ſhelter from the troubles of a Sunſhine day, when all the airy tribe (wandring) flock to him conceal'd himſelf in the obſcure retired reſi-

residence of an hollow tree; no sooner had he cloistered up himself, but between discontent and something of a pleasing satisfaction, he first uttered his amazing screeks, being in a slumber, and dreaming of the assaults were made at him by his feathered enemies, of all sorts, and then again awaking, whoopt for joy that he was delivered from them; thus did he whoop and hollow incessantly, which infused such a terrour into our distrustful minds, that Whips, Switches, and Spurs were all too few to expedite our hast. For we absolutely thought those Hollows were the out-cryes of the Country following us for what we had committed. We at length took Sanctuary in an Inn, where we had some interest and confidence in our security.

Understanding that our days work had been prosperous, our Host calls lustily for Sack, which the drawer doubles in the Bar, the Hostler must be one of our company too, and hail fellow with us, who knowing what courses we take, presume we dare not cavil, lest they betray our practices. *Sic nos non nobis.* So we rob for them, and not for our selves; for by that time we have profusely frolickt (a bill whereof shall be brought in of twice as much as was called for) and have bestowed our largesses to the Servants, and offered up our (expected) sacrifices to our Landlady, or her Daughter for some private favour received, we find our selves to have the least share, and so betake our selves to our trade, till apprehension take from us that liberty, and the law sentenceth us to pay our lives as a due debt we owe to Justice.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Scouring the Road, he lights on a Farmers house which he intended to rob, but desists from that resolution, falling in Love with his Daughter, who was exceeding beautiful; gets her with Child under the pretence of Marriage, but afterwards refusing it, She and her Parents tax him with the undoing of the young Woman; whereupon he leaveth them, giving them no other satisfaction then what they could gather out of a Copy of Verses he sent them.

RIding along the road, *I* met with a young Girl with a Milk-Pail on her head, but *I* was amazed to see such perfection in one mortal face: *I* rid up to her very near, purposely to entertain some discourse with her; *I* propounded some questions to this pretty Country-Girl; as, Which was the readiest way to such a place? *&c.* which with much respect and modest confidence she resolved: she opening a gate to milk her Cows, *I* followed, and tying my Horse to an Hedg, *I* beg'd her an excuse for being so rude, and beseecht her charitable opinion of my present actions, assuring her *I* would not offer the least injury nor prejudice to her chastity. Being over-perswaded with my protestations and vows to that purpose, she admitted me to sit down and discourse with her whilest she performed the office of a Milk-maid. *I* could hardly contain my self within the bounds of continence, when *I* viewed her pretty little hand *stroking* the *Duggs*, which indeed had so heightned my amorous passion, that *I* soon forgot my Oaths and Promises, but after some dalliance, what

what by entreaties and love-perſwaſions, & what by corporeal ſtrength, *I* obtained the fruition of my deſires. We then grew ſomewhat more familiar, but the burden of the Song was, *I had undone her:* let him that reads judge the truth thereof. We concluded at length that ſhe ſhould go home to her Fathers houſe, and that neer night I would come thither likewiſe, according to the time appointed, as if I had never ſeen her before.

She ſubtilly goes in and acquaints her Father and Mother that there was a Gentleman (without) whom by his countenance, garb and geſture, ſhewed himſelf no leſs; that fearing to travel farther, being night, knowing not the way, deſired to reſt himſelf there till morning. With much reſpects from her Parents to her own great ſatisfaction (which *I* diſcern'd in her eyes) I was kindly entertain'd, and nobly treated. That night we intended to be better acquainted, by the renovation of our late enjoyments; but our unlucky Starrs were impropitious to our amorous deſigns. Next morning I ſeemed to be very ill, that I might have ſome pretence for my ſtaying, which I acquainted the Daughter withal: the old people were very loving and courteous, ſo that as ſoon as they heard thereof, with much pitty they viſited me, and with as much care they provided what was neceſſary for me. I offer'd them money, ſhewing good ſtore of Gold, that they might have the better eſteem of me. Thus I lay for at leaſt a fortnight; ſeveral Doctors had been with me, but none knew my diſtemper. All this while I nightly had the ſociety of my freſh Country-Miſtreſs, who after the firſt *bout* deviated from the common cuſtomes of her Sex, did not coyiſhly refuſe that which was the

center

center of her hopes, wishes and desires. Fearing least I might be suspected I left off counterfeiting, and shewed them some recovery of my strength. When at any time the good old people would come into my Chamber to sit with me, the main subject of my discourse would be my resentment of their favours, and that if I lived I would gratefully repay them. Being restored to my former healthful condition, I one day told them I could never recompence their love and care of me but by marrying their Daughter, whom *I* told them *I* loved most affectionately. Her Parents made many excuses, as that she was but a poor Country Girle and the like, but glad I perceived they were to hear such an overprized motion. Nothing gave them greater content then to see us together, by which we had as many opportunities as we listed. My main aim was still to know of my yong Mistress what store of Coyn her Father had, and where it lay, but to my great grief and vexation she told me he had not five pound within doors, having lately bought a purchase. *I* now thought it was to little purpose to stay longer, having reapt the *crop* of her Mothers labour, and so resolved to be going, but not without one nights solemn leave taking of her, resolving to have a *Sillabub* with her own Milk-pail. The night being come, she purposely stay'd up till all the rest were gone to bed. But we being too imprudently hasty in the Kitchin, we set a Chair against two Barrels pil'd one on the other, which we thought to be a prop sufficient; but in the action fell with the Chair, and we both were so entangled, that we could not disingage our selves so soon, but that her Father came out crying, *In the name of God what is*

the

the matter? And groping about caught me by the naked breech. Seeing there was no remedy, I desired him to be silent, and not spread his Daughters disgrace; if so, I would make her shortly a recompence. The old man was very much perplext, and could not forbear telling his Wife of what had past. They both cryed out that their Daughter was undone; which implyed a contradiction in what their own eyes had seen: The Daughter was in the same tone, unless I would speedily marry her.

I stay'd afterwards about some three days to colour the matter, and at last marcht off *incognito*, sending her twenty pieces of Gold, and these lines; which, although I knew they understood not, yet I could not but express my self by writing, if for nothing else but mine own satisfaction.

Is it not strange thou and thy friends should say,
Thou art undone by me? Let's see which way.
Have I not done to my great toyl and pain,
What all thy friends cannot undo again?
Call but to mind the pleasures thou hast tasted,
The hours and minutes which with thee I wasted
To bring thee to perfection, and to teach
Thee Learning, far above thy Sexes reach.
Have I not taught thee oft Astronomy,
When on thy back with me all night did'st lie?
Within thy Mothers Garden, shew'd thee all
The Starry course, and Spheares Celestial.
For every Sign *in Heaven, did I not make*
Another in thy Bellies Zodiak?
That night I made a Via Lactea,
Unto Loves-Court *another* Milky Way,

Out-spreading that ran from the full swoln-Dugg
Of Juno, *which young* Hercules *did tug.*
Did I not teach thee Poetry that night,
And how in Trippid Dactyls *thou shouldst write?*
Did I not teach thee next Arithmetick,
Both what a Cypher *stands for, what a* Prick?
How thou shouldst add, substract, *and then* divide;
How to encrease, *and* Multiply *beside?*
Instead of Counters, *how thou shouldst use kisses;*
And with a Pin *tell all a Womans blisses.*
I taught thee then Geometry, *the notion*
Of length *and* bredth, egality, proportion
Of Quadrant Triangles; *the way to enter*
Circles, *or* Semi-circles; *how the* Center
Stands ever fixt, *how that every* line
Direct *or* oblique, circular, *or* trine
Hath still its ending; *how to take the* height
Of any blazing bearded Star *by night.*
I taught thee Musicks harmony *to know,*
To keep true time, *where thou shouldst* rest, *and how:*
Learn'd thee likewise thy notes, large, long, & brief,
Prickt Minom, *with a* Crotchet, *and the chief*
Of the lov'd Art, *good* discant *for to make*
Upon a plain Song, Discords *also take*
With a sweet close, *and* meltingly *to fall*
Into a Treble, *ravishing withal.*
To hold thy Prickt notes out *full to the length,*
Raising *thy self, it failing not in strength.*
I shew'd thee why Artists *hold* six Clifts *best,*
And why 'tis prized far above the rest,
Because it keeps the middst; *the very* heart
And Soul *of* Musick *is the* inner part.
Yet art undone thou saidst? is to impart
The hidden secrets *of* mysterious art
Undoing to thee? Hadst thou ever spent

Thy

Thy means upon me, or thy money lent,
And had not paid the Intr'ſt back to thee,
Thou and thy friends might then have rail'd at me.
That pretious nothing, *at ſo dear a rate,*
That high priz'd jewel (none can eſtimate)
Thy Maiden-head *I do confeſs I had,*
For which thy friends not only made me glad;
But you and they are bound to bleſs that hour,
And happy time, I cropt thy Virgin-flower.
What wert before I knew thee, but an Aſs,
A rude neglected home-ſpun Country-laſs,
Knowing not how to ſpeak, to go or look,
But hide thy ſelf when ſeen in every nook;
And bluſh, nay tremble if thou wert found out;
Strive to be gone again; ſcratch, cry, and pout
If one but touch thy Apron, and wouldſt ſpit
In's mouth ſhould come to kiſs thee: for thy wit
It did extend but unto No, *and I,*
Confeſs this truth, or elſe in faith you lye.
This was thy eloquence; why did I love thee?
Young plump, & fair thou wert, & that did move me.
I took thee and refin'd thee, made thee new,
Alter'd thy nature, chang'd thy former hew:
Taught thee to kiſs, embrace, and entertain
A Lover with that Sp'rit and catching vein;
The Goddeſs of delight in her own ſport
May ſtrive to equal thee, but muſt come ſhort.
Such an attractive action in the touch
Thou haſt; ſo full of various motion, ſuch
Pleaſurable changes, now warm as fire,
Now cold again, then ready to expire
In a ſweet paſſion, as 'twixt life and death;
Now motionleſs, then with ſhort panting *breath*
Striv'ſt to revive, juſt as when life is ending
By violence, e'ne in the very ſpending

Of the last spirits, the hand will grasp,
And catch at every thing; so didst thou clasp
Me in thy arms, when in our amorous play,
Like to mans life, I'de like to drop away.
Where hadst thou all thy breeding but from me?
Who bound thee first, and now have made thee free.
Thy petulant discourse, and apish toying,
A change of humors, now a sullen coying;
All which I taught thee, which do make thee rare,
Now are thy Attributes as well as fair:
And these will render thee belov'd unto
Experienc'd men, for very well they know
Woman was made for recreation,
For mans delight and procreation.
And what content is in a simpering fool,
A squeamish thing, she doth mans spirits cool?
Beats back the flowing current of his blood,
And ebbs it in the very spring or flood.
Man loves not like a beast the act of kind,
For by so acting he but dulls the mind,
Dejects the countenance, and deads the eye,
Murders his mirth, intrudes Melancholly,
And sad repentance on the troubled heart,
Throwing an heavy slumber on each part.
It is the act of acting that doth take
The sense of Man, and compleat pleasure make.
'Tis harsh to hear a School-boy in one tone
Repeat his lesson, like a Bagpipes drone.
But it doth ravish with delight the ear,
Well worded and sweet languag'd lines to hear,
Pronunc'd by one hath skill and art to know
When he should raise his voyce, when bring it low.
For though a Poet write good Lines, it is
The speaker that doth make them hit or miss.
So though a Wench be ne're so fair, so neat,

Or

Or well proportion'd, if she want the feat
Of acting well upon Loves Theater,
It will not make mans loving paſſion ſtir.
She's like one handſome in a ſplendid ſuit,
Only to fit a Stage and play the Mute,
And ſhall not go clapt off with frequent kiſſes,
The Lovers plaudit, *but diſtaſteful* hiſſes.
And ſuch wert thou, when firſt I met with thee,
An innocent dull thing: Now if thou lie
With cold December, *thou wilt make him ſweat*
Out at his Icy-marrow *with thy heat.*
It is delight enough to touch thy hand,
Or feel thy active pulſe beat, or but ſtand
In oppoſition to thy ſparkling eye,
Or taſt thy lips, or keep thee company;
To ſee thee dance, or hear thee ſpeak, or ſing;
But who attains unto the other thing,
I cannot name with patience. Let him reſt,
For with the Crown of pleaſures he is bleſt.
Now have I brought thee to thy excellence
With my exceſſive toyl, *and dear* expence
Of my beſt blood; *and added to thee more*
Then was in all thy Anceſtors *before,*
Gentility. *I have enricht thy mind*
With the chief Ornament of Woman-kind,
Behaviour: *Taught thee to live and* ſpend
Of thy own gettings, *without help of friend.*
And have I this (*ungrateful* Girle) *for all*
That I have done *to thee. Why doſt thou call*
Me thy Undoer, *ſince that I have been*
Thy ſecond Maker, *and have* ſtood between
Thee and thy wants? How e're I will forgive,
For I am in charity, and do believe
The only cauſe why I am taxt ſo ſore
With thy undoing, 's 'cauſe I do no more,

I do no more, becauſe thou may'ſt grow common
To more then me, and I will ſhare with no man.

CHAP. XXIX.

From this Farmers houſe he rides he cared not whither. On the Road he is ſtrangely ſurprized by a Woman-Robber in Mans apparel: He diſcovers it by unbuttoning her Breeches to ſearch for private Pockets within. They two conclude a perpetual Friendſhip.

ABruptly taking my leave of the Farmer and his loving Daughter, I rid a long time, but met with none worthy of my taking Cognizance; being wearied I ſtruck into an Inn, and by that time I had throughly refreſht my ſelf, the evening began to approach. Whereupon I mounted and ſo put on. Paſſing by a ſmall Coppice in a bottom between two Hills, a Gentleman (as I then ſuppoſed) well armed, and handſomely accoutred, ſtarted out upon me, and bid me deliver inſtantly. Hearing him ſay ſo, I told him if he would have but the patience I would; and with that drew out a Pocket-Piſtol and fired it at him, without doing any execution. If you are for a little ſport (ſaid the Gentleman) I ſhall ſhew you ſome inſtantly; whereupon drawing a Piſtol he ſhot me into the leg: having ſo done, with his Sword (which hung ready at his wriſt) neatly at a blow he cut the reins of my Bridle, ſo that I was not able to guide my Horſe. But he being at good command, and uſed to the charge, with the winding

ing of my body, I gave him to underſtand what he was to do. Come Sir, ſaid my adverſary, have you enough yet? In faith Sir, ſaid I, I'le exchange but one Piſtol more, and if that prove inſucceſsful I ſhall ſubmit to your mercy. Whereupon I ſhot, but miſſed my mark, however I killed his Horſe, which inſtantly fell, my Gentleman was ſo nimble, that before I could think what to do, he had ſheathed his ſword in my Horſes belly, which made me come tumbling down too with a *Horſe-pox*. Once more ſaid my Antagoniſt, we are upon equal terms, and ſince the obſcurity of the place gives us freedom, let us try our courages, one muſt fall. And thereupon with his Sword (which was for cut and thruſt) he made a full paſs at my body; but putting it by, I cloſed in with him, and upon the Hug threw him with much facility. I wondered much at it; which I need not have done, ſince his nature (as afterwards I underſtood) was ſo prone to it. Having him down, Now Sir, ſaid I, I ſhall teach you to be careful on whom you ſet, you have as imprudently undertaken this enterprize as a *Pickeroon* did once, who ſeeing a Man of War high built, and but few men aboard her diſcoverable, her Port-holes being likewiſe faſt, clapt her aboard immediately, thinking ſhe had been a Merchant-man, but they found the contrary, the deck being inſtantly filled with men that were below, and running out her Guns there could be no wiſdom of reſiſtance. Wherefore now Sir yield, or I ſhall compel you. With much reluctancy he did. With cords I had ready for that purpoſe, I tyed both his hands and feet, and ſo fell to rifling him. Unbottoning his Doubled to find whether there was no Gold quilted therein,

I wondered to ſee a pair of Breaſts ſo unexpectedly greater and whiter then any Mans; but being intent about my buſineſs, that amazement vaniſht from my thoughts. Then did I come to his breeches (which I laid open) my curious ſearch omitted not any place wherein I might ſuſpect the concealment of moneys: at laſt proffering to remove his ſhirt from between his legs, he ſuddenly cried out (and ſtrove to lay his hand there, but could not) I beſeech you Sir, be civil, ſaid he: I imagining that ſome notable *Treaſure* lay there obſcured, I pulled up his ſhirt (*alias* Smock) and found my ſelf not much miſtaken.

The ſight ſo ſurprized me, as if I had been converted into a Statue by the Head of a *Gorgon*. For the preſent it lay neither in her power nor mine to pull down her Smock again: but after a little pauſe, I haſtily unbound her, and taking her in my Arms, Pardon me moſt courageous *Amazon*, (ſaid I) for thus rudely dealing with you, it was nothing but ignorance that cauſed this error; for could my dim-ſighted ſoul have diſtinguiſht what you were, the greatneſs of love and reſpect I bear your Sex would have deterr'd me from contending with you. But I eſteem this my ignorance my greateſt happineſs, ſince knowledge in this caſe would have deprived me of the benefit of knowing there could be ſo much Proweſs in a Woman. For your ſake I ſhall ever retain (ſince you have reſtored it) a good eſteem of the worſt of Females. She beg'd me not to be too tedious in my expreſſions, nor pump for eloquent phraſes alledging this was no proper place to make Orations in. But if you will enlarge your ſelf, let us go to the next Inn. I liked her advice very well, and returning

turning what I had taken from her, I followed it by following her through divers obscure passages, till we came to a Wood, where in a place the Sun had not seen since the first deluge, stood an house. At our approach the Servants were all in a hurry who should first take Mrs. *Viragos* Horse, for they all knew her, being no way estranged to her disguize: with much respect, we were conducted into a very stately room, where embracing each other, we knit an indissolvable tye of friendship.

CHAP. XXX.

After Supper they enter in Discourse, wherein she giveth him a short account of her Life: relating how notably she revenged her self on her Husband for his unworthy and base carriage towards her.

SHe now laid her self open to me, not concealing any thing from me, having before made my self acquainted with her greatest Secret. Frankly she called for Bottles of Wine, which we smartly drank together out of Beer-glasses: had not Supper been speedily provided, which required a cessation for some time, I should not have been in a condition to discern the Dish, nor him that brought it to the Table. Having taken some repast, I began to be refresht, she not in the least disturbed all this while.

I prest her to tell me what she was, and what manner of life she led. Sir, said she, *I* cannot deny your request, wherefore to satisfie you, know that I was the Daughter of a Sword-Cutler. In

my

my younger days my Mother would have taught me to handle a Needle; but my Martial ſpirit gain-ſaid all perſwaſions to that purpoſe. *I* could never endure to be among the Utenſils of the Kitchin, but ſpent moſt of my time in my Fathers Shop, taking wonderful delight in handling thoſe Warlike inſtruments: to take a Sword in my hand well mounted and brandiſh it, was reckoned by me among the chief of my recreations. Being about a douzen years of age *I* ſtudied all ways imaginable how *I* might make my ſelf acquainted with a Fencing-Maſter. Time brought my deſires to their accompliſhment, for ſuch an one as *I* wiſht for, caſually came into our Shop to have his Blade furbiſht, and Fortune ſo ordered it, there was none to anſwer him but my ſelf. Having given him that ſatisfaction he deſired, though not expecting it from me: Amongſt other talk *I* demanded of him whether he was not a Profeſſor of the noble Science? (for *I* gueſt ſo much by his Poſtures, Looks, and Expreſſions.) He told me he was a well-willer thereunto; being glad of this opportunity, deſiring him to conceal my intentions, *I* requeſted him the favour as to give me ſome inſtructions how *I* ſhould mannage a Sword: at firſt he ſeemed amazed at my Propoſal, but perceiving *I* was in earneſt, he granted my petition, allotting me ſuch a time to come to him as was moſt convenient. *I* became ſo expert at Back-ſword and Single-Rapier in a ſhort time, that *I* needed not his aſſiſtance any longer: My Parents not in the leaſt miſtruſting any ſuch thing.

I ſhall wave what Exploits *I* did by the help of a diſguiſe, and only tell you that when *I* arrived to fifteen years of age an *Inn*-Keeper married me,

me, and carried me down into the Country. For two whole years we lived very peaceably and comfortably together, but at length the insolent and imperious temper of my Husband made me begin to show my Naturel humour. Once a week we seldom mist of a Combat between us, which frequently proved so sharp, that it was well if my Husband came off with a single broken pate. His Peace-maker in amorous dalliances wrought not those effects in me as usually it doth with the rest of our Sex, by which means the gaping wounds of our discontents and differences being not presently salved up, they became in a manner incurable.

I never was much inclineable to Venereal pastimes, not but that *I* was willing enough to admit of them, but *I* ever hated that a Dunghill-Cock should tread a Hen of the Game. Being stinted likewise of Money, my life grew altogether comfortless, and *I* lookt on my condition as insupportable. Wherefore as the onely remedy or expedient to mitigate my vexatious troubles, *I* contrived a way how *I* might sometimes take a Purse; *I* judged this resolution safe enough, (if *I* were not taken in the very fact) for who could suspect me to be a Robber, wearing abroad upon such designs mans Apparel, but at home only that which was suitable and agreeable to my own Sex. Besides, none could have better encouragement and conveniency then my self: for keeping an Inn, who is more proper to have in custody my Guests brought into my house then my self? or if committed to my Husbands tutelage, *I* could not fail to inform my self of the richness of the Booty.

More-

Moreover, the Hoſteſs is the perſon whoſe company is moſt deſired, before whom they are no ways ſcrupulous to relate which way they are going, and frequently what the affair was that led them that way.

Courage *I* knew I wanted not, (be you my impartial Judge, Sir) what then could hinder me from being ſucceſsful in ſuch an enterprize? Being thus reſolved, *I* ſoon procured neceſſary Habiliments for theſe my contrivances, and never miſcarried in any of them till now. Inſtead of going to Market, or riding five or ſix miles about ſuch a buſineſs, (the uſual pretences with which *I* blinded my Husband) *I* would when out of ſight ride a contrary road to this Houſe (wherein we now are) and Metamorphoſe my ſelf, and being fitted at points Pad uncontroulably, coming off always moſt Victoriouſly. Not long ſince my Husband had about thirty pounds due to him ſome twenty Miles from his habitation, and deſigned ſuch a day for its reception. Glad *I* was to hear of this, reſolving now to be revenged of him for all thoſe injuries and churliſh outrages he had committed againſt me. I knew very well which way he went, and knew the time of his coming home; where *I* way-laid him at his return. And happily as I would have it, he did not make me wait above three hours for him. *I* let him paſs me, knowing that by the ſwiftneſs of my Horſe, (having two or three always ready in the Stable) *I* could eaſily overtake him, and ſo *I* did, riding with him but a mile or two before I could do my intended buſineſs. At laſt (looking about me) *I* ſaw the coaſt clear on every ſide; Wherefore riding

ding up close to him, and laying hold of his Bridle, I clapt a Pistol to his breast, commanding him to deliver, or he was a dead man. My imperious Don seeing death before his face, had like to have saved me the labour, by dying voluntarily without compulsion, and so amazed at his sudden surprizal, that he lookt like an Apparition, or one lately risen from the dead. Sirrha (said *I*) be quick: but a dead Palsie had so seized every part of him, that his eyes were incapable of directing his hands to his Pocket. But *I* soon recall'd his lost spirits by two or three smart blows with the flat of my Sword, which so awakened him out of that deep Lethargy he was in, that with much submissiveness he delivered me his moneys. After *I* had dismounted him and cut the Reins of his Bridle and Girts, I basted him soundly, till that I had made jelly of his bones, and that his flesh lookt like *Egyptian* Mummy. Now you Rogue (said I) *I* am even with you, have a care the next time how you strike a woman (your wife *I* mean) for none but such as dare not fight a man will lift up his hand against the weaker vessel. Now you see what it is to provoke them, for if irritated too much, they are restless till they have accomplisht their satisfactory revenge. I have a good mind to end thy wicked courses with thy life, but that I am loath to be hanged for *nothing*, such a worthless man. Farewel, this money shall serve me to purchase Wine to drink Healths to the confusion of such Rascally and mean spirited things, and so *I* left him.

She was about to have proceeded in such agreeable relations of her rencounters, when word was brought

brought her up two Gentlemen below desired to speak with her: craving my excuse she went down, and in a little time returned with them: She made an Apology to me for so doing, adding, that if she had committed a crime herein, my future knowledg of those persons would extenuate it. By their effeminate Countenances I could not miss of judging rightly what they were, *viz.* Females. After several discourses we grew so familiar, that the longest continued friendship could not boast of more freedom.

Having talkt and drank our selves weary, we concluded to lie all in one Chamber, there being two Beds: what our Nocturnal passages were, I'le give the Reader leave to imagine. After some days and nights joval frolickings, I took my leave of them.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXI.

Being now upon the Pad *alone, he baits at an Inn, with which he was acquainted, and there by the Hostler is informed of a Booty, which he pursued, but was soundly banged for his pains, loosing both his Horse, and what small matter he had left.*

VEry loath I was to part with these *Amazons* neither should I, had not scarcity of Money called me away to look out for more. For no man could ever be better pleased with society, then *I* was with theirs; enjoying such persons whose courage and fidelity might vye with the most approved male friend, and reaping at the same time the choisest favours *Venus* can confer on her chiefest Favourites.

One remarkable passage concerning this *Female-Robber*, I had like to have forgot; which was this, She would frequently *Pad* or rob on foot in Womans apparel, but so disguised, that she could not easily be known: Getting a Cushion, or some such thing (by putting it under her Cloaths to make her seem big with Child) she would usually walk abroad, it may be three or four miles at length, near some beaten Road. Thus had she the benefit of viewing all rid by. If she saw any single person by whose equipage she might imagine him to have his Pockets well furnished, before he came near her, she used to feign her self both exceeding

ing sick and weary, groaning in a most pittiful manner. What mans heart could be so obdurate as to pass her by neglected, and without taking any notice of her? Who would not proffer a big-bellied Woman (tired and indisposed) the courtesie of riding behind them for a little way to refresh her? As she told me she met with very few that did not take her up behind them, seeing her in that deplorable condition. Having rid a pretty way, seeing the Coast clear, and coming to a convenient place for to execute her design, she would pretend the Gentlemans Hat, that rid before her, offended her eyes: most in point of civility would put it off, though they immediately put it on again: then would she with a Cord with a nooze, which she had ready for that purpose, clap it over his head, and so whipping off the Horse, pull the Man after her, oftentimes half strangling him, serving some as the *Mutes* do the *Bassas* with their black box and silk string therein, when they are designed for death by the *Grand Signors* appointment and command. After this would she strip them of what they had, hiding it in places she contrived proper for concealment.

But to return where I left off; before I took my leave of her, perceiving the temper of this brave noble Spirit, and that it was Poetically inclined, out of my true resentment of her due merit, I gave her these Lines, which she thankfully received, though modestly denyed to concern her in the least.

Stand

Stand back ye Muſes, Mars, come guide my Pen,
To rank this Female Heroe 'mongſt thy Men.
So, ſo, 'tis well. Now let us to the matter,
'Tis ſuch a ſubject that I cannot flatter.
The Pantalooners ſtrut, and Muffetoons;
Taking great pains for to appear Buffoons.
They do ſeem men, and like 'em wear their Swords:
But dare not draw; ſuch may be kill'd with words:
Theſe love a Lady, and affect perfumes:
Who lighter *are, (then what they wear) their* Plumes.
Thou ſcornſt ſuch ſhadows, or Chimæra's, *which*
Are good for nothing, but a Womans itch.
Thou lov'ſt that man alone, that dares in ſpight
Of fate, ſcorn Death *himſelf in fight.*
Thy actions ſpeak thee man, *who dares deny it?*
Believe this truth, or if you dare, then try it;
'Twill be a favour to her, for they'l find,
That never man injoy'd ſo brave a mind.

Bidding this my *Minerva* and her aſſociates adieu, I rid on in the next road, without meeting any I thought requiſite to faſten on. At length I came to an Inn, where I was very well acquainted, and intended there to have refreſht my ſelf; but the Hoſtler prevented it, not ſuffering me to alight, telling me haſtily, that there was a Gentleman not an hour ſince baited there, who had in his Portmantue a conſiderable purchaſe; that he was a poor ſpirited fellow, whom he knew, and that he ever had an abſolute antipathy to a naked Sword, and that he was gone ſuch a road, &c. I ſtay'd not ſo long as to drink, but with al poſſible expedition

made after him; ascending a small Hill, I discovered him, who rid an ordinary pace, wherefore I slacked mine to cool my Horse; however I soon overtook him, and rode by him, not without viewing him well; riding down the Hill I did alight, purposely that he might overtake me, which he did; being past I mounted, and at the very bottom I bid him stand and deliver instantly, or he was a dead man. Sis, sis, sir, (said he lisping very much) I-I-I-I am going home. I bid him not make these proposed delays, lest he smarted, and therefore wisht him to dispatch and give me his money, for I was informed (I told him) that he had a sum behind him. T-t-t-'tis true (he reply'd) b-b-but it is my Fathers m-m-money. Hang your Father and his stuttering Coxcomb too, (said *I*) *I* must have what you have. W-wh-why then you shall, (said he) and with that drew out a pocket-pistol and fired it at me; which made my horse start, and very much surprizing me, expecting not the least resistance from such a seemingly ignorant and cowardly fellow; by that means he had time and liberty to draw his sword (which was almost as broad as a Chopping-knife) and came upon me so furiously, that *I* am sure *I* had not time to defend my self: he so laid about him, that *I* soon lay at his mercy. *I* was forced to beg very hard for my life, which *I* obtained with very much ado: then he fell to my pockets, not leaving any suspected place for money unsearcht: by which I guest him to have belonged to our profession, and was not mistaken, as you shall understand by and by. He went to my horse, and viewing him, he seemed to like him very

ry well. Wherefore coming to me (for he had cut me off my horſe) ha-ha-hark you (ſaid he) you are but a raw Thief, a me-me-meer Child, & it is but fit that you ſhould be ſent to a ma-ma-Maſter to be ta-ta-taught knowledge, and be whipt for your foo-foo-liſhneſs. You ſaid you muſt have my Fa-fa-Fathers money, but *I* tell you *I* muſt have your hau-hau-Horſe, and ſo farewell. He was ſo kind as to leave me his, which was a pitiful Jade, however neceſſity compelled me to mount him, and anger ſpurr'd me on to be revenged of the Hoſtler, but *I* better conſidered with my ſelf, that probably that horſe was known there, and ſo *I* ſhould be detected; wherefore *I* rid a contrary way, and took up my lodging in a place *I* never had been in before. As ſoon as *I* alighted, abundance of people flockt about me, ſeeing me all bloody, to know the cauſe thereof. Whereupon *I* related in a very doleful manner how this ſad accident befel me. That travelling to ſuch a place with about 150 pieces of Gold, *I* was ſet upon by five or ſix luſty Rogues, who rob'd me, and becauſe *I* made what reſiſtance *I* could, to ſave what *I* had, it being my whole Eſtate, they had thus barbarouſly mangled me, hacking and hewing me till *I* grew weary, and at laſt with much difficulty eſcapt with my life. There was a general ſorrow for me, pitying me ſo much that the Inhabitants ſtrove one with another, who ſhould ſhew me moſt kindneſs. A Chyrurgeon was preſently ſent for, who (as he was a Barber too) *Barbarian* like, dreſt my wounds; ſome were employed in procuring me Cordials, and getting

me things neceſſary; others were ſent out to make inquiſition after the Thieves.

This Gentleman that ſerv'd me this trick, was (as I underſtood afterwards) an High-way-man himſelf, who being well born and bred, but his Father being either at that time unable or unwilling to ſupply him with what moneys his laviſh expences required; Nature having beſtowed on him a ſtout reſolute heart, and ſtrength anſwering his courage, betook himſelf to the *Pad*. In which profeſſion he behaved himſelf ſo gallantly, that he was ſtyled the Father or Governor of his Tribe. But his attempts prov'd not always ſucceſsful, ſo that there was hardly a County in *England*, wherein he had not been in Priſon; being frequently arraigned for his life, but having eminent and potent friends, he ſtill came off; this did his Father and Kindred ſo frequent, that they grew weary, and he narrowly eſcaping with his life one time, and finding that his kindred matter'd not much if he were hanged, he ſubmitted himſelf to his Father, making a ſolemn proteſtation that he would never follow the like courſes again: whereupon his Father ſetled an Annual Eſtate upon him, on which he now liveth very orderly. Thus much briefly of my overcomer.

I had not laid above a night in this place for the cure of my wounds, before I was queſtion'd about my Horſe by ſome perſons that knew him well, and taken on ſuſpition for murdering the Gentleman the right owner; which ſeem'd more then probable by various circumſtances. Firſt, this Gentleman was not to be found, which well might be his late ſucceſs, having conveyed him

on

on the wings of speed to an obscure place, there to revel and congratulate his good Fortune by the speedy spending his late purchase. Next, my many and dangerous wounds sufficiently declared the great hazard of the two combatants lives: but that which chiefly committed me, was the Gentlemans horse, which I like an impudent insipid Coxcomb must ride on, which reason must needs say was the ready way to ride Post to the Gallows. Notwithstanding the miserable condition of my Carbonadoed body, I was inclosed between a pair of walls, and had undoubtedly been hang'd for being robb'd, had not the Gentleman appear'd again amongst his friends; then did my accusers slip their necks out of the collar, and none prosecuting me, I was discharged. Staying a little while in the Town for refreshment, an old acquaintance there found me out, of whom I cannot but give you a character, since the passages of his life hath been so remarkable and notorious, and from the short relation of which I question not but the Reader will reap much benefit and satisfaction. For indeed examples have so great an influence and power upon the actions of mans life, as that we find men are more wrought upon by president then precept. To this intent preceding Generations have made it their grand care and labour, not only to communicate to their Posterity the lives of good & honest men, that thereby man might fall in love with the smooth and beautiful face of vertue, but have also taken the same pains to recount the actions of criminal and wicked persons, that by the dreadful aspects of *Vice*, they may be deter'd from imbracing her.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

He here reneweth his acquaintance with a cunning fellow, that formerly ſtudyed the Law, and ſince made it his ſole buſineſs to practiſe the abuſe thereof.

ABout four days after I was diſcharged, there came into the ſame Inn where I lay a Gentleman, who hearing ſome of the houſe diſcourſing of the Robbery that was lately committed, he deſired to be particularly informed, which they did, adding that the rob'd Gentleman lay wounded in the houſe; he inquired of them my name, which they told him, as I had told them, having a name for every month in the year. Very deſirous he was, if it might be no diſturbance to me, to give me a viſit, unto which I condeſcended, a ſervant to that intent deſiring to know my pleaſure. Aſſoon as he entred the Room, I verily thought I knew him, though I could not for the preſent call to mind where I had ſeen him. I was ſo muffled about the Chops, that it was impoſſible for him to have any knowledge of me. He ſat down by me, & askt me various queſtions, to which I gave him *convenient* ſatisfaction. At laſt I recalled my memory, and askt him if his name was not ſo —— he anſwered me affirmatively. Dear friend (ſaid *I*) *I* am glad to ſee you: come, be not amazed; my right name is ſo -- with that he embraced me, and was overjoyed that he ſo caſually found me out. Laying aſide all formal niceties, *I* unboſomed my ſelf to him, not mincing the truth in the leaſt;

for

for we know our ſelves *Birds of a Feather, Rogues together.* He condol'd my wounded condition, and comforted me, by telling me that he would not leave me till I was well, and that he would procure me ſuch a *Plaiſter* for the wounds I had received, that ſhould prove very effectual. He ſtayed with me above a fortnight, enjoying what pleaſures the Country was capable to afford us. Being by our ſelves (for ſo we deſigned the major part of every day;) we diſcourſed interchangeably of nothing but our adventures, *&c.* how we might lay new plots for our advantage: I gave him the epitome of what I had done, ſince I left him, who took more pleaſure in the relation of my Rogueries, then the *Quaker* did in Courting the *Mare* near *Rocheſter.* But when he began to relate his Villanies, *I* was ſtruck dumb with admiration; and what cannot a man do if indued with the ſtrength of his natural parts, ſharpneſs of wit, quickneſs of apprehenſion, depth and ſolidneſs of judgement, with a tenacious memory? Now becauſe he ever had a ſmooth and inſinuating tongue, with the command thereof, *I* ſhall give him leave to tell his own tale.

CHAP. XXXIX.

The Life of a Law-abuſing Cheat.

Dear Friend,

FOr what am I beholding, it is to Nature alone; for as I am aſhamed of my birth, ſo I cannot condemn my Father for not beſtowing Education on me, ſince his condition was ſo low, yet his ſpirit ſo high, that he would not beg himſelf though ready to ſtarve, however would permit me, which was the ſole ſupport of his and my life. I was ten years old before I could meet with any preferment: one day Fortune favouring, ſhe offer'd to my view a Commodity, which with confidence and dexterity I might carry off undiſcovered. My hands preſently ſucceſsfully effected what my mind ſuggeſted; it was but of ſmall value, the utmoſt I could get for it was a Link, with which that night I more then trebled what it coſt. This courſe I followed by night, & ran in errands by day, ſo that I had furniſhed my ſelf both with Cloaths and Money. In proceſs of time I was admitted as a Servant into a Scriveners Houſe; my Maſter taking a liking to me, put me to a Writing-ſchool, where being capacitated for his buſineſs, he puts me into the Shop, and inſtructs me in his imployment. I had not been there long before I made

made my self very eminent, by studying the Law, the Rudiments whereof I understood so well, as I knew how to ingross an Indenture. This made my Master esteem of me, and that estimation made me proud; and being not yet bound his Apprentice, I thought I knew better things then to be his servant any longer, and so left him. Then was I with an Attorney a while, afterwards with a Counsellor, till thinking I had Law enough, I took an House, resolving to see what I could do with it my self. I sollicited several mens businesses, giving a general content, insomuch that my credit and reputation increased daily. Now did I marry for Wealth, having not the least affection; for her face lookt much like a gammon of Bacon with the skin off. Sometimes I liv'd with her, too long for any delight I took in her; and being resolv'd to be rid of her, this stratagem I used. I shewed her more kindness then formerly, pretending I would do nothing but what I would consult with her about; which so wrought upon her love, that she would have been content to have sacrificed her Soul for my Interest; and made her withal so opinionative, that she judged every silly and unsavory expression she utter'd was no less then an *Oracle*. Having brought my business thus far to perfection, I came home one evening very melancholy: very inquisitive she was to know the cause. My Dear, (said I) I will not conceal any thing from thee; such a Gentleman hath injur'd me, and I cannot rest till I be reveng'd. Thou knowest my Nature, if wrong'd I am implacable, it is a fault I cannot help. Come, come, said my wife, let us go to bed,

bed, and there we will conſult. Being there ſhe askt me how we ſhould bring our revenge about? *I* ſeemed to ſtudy a while,--*I* have it now (ſaid *I*) thou art with Childe; he is one tender of his reputation; tax him for being the Father of it, and that will do the work to my full content: very loth ſhe was, becauſe of the talk of the people; but *I* ſatisfied this poor ſilly harmleſs ſoul, by telling her that as long as *I* knew her chaſte, it was no matter what others ſaid of her: whereupon ſhe condeſcended, and had the Perſon before a Juſtice, where ſhe ſwore poſitively that ſhe was got with Childe by that Gentleman. *I* preſently took advantage of her Confeſſion, turned her off, leaving them both to the diſpoſal of the Spiritual Court. This was my firſt prank.

One of my Clients another time, having bought a good handſome Tenement, had ſo much confidence as to put me in Poſſeſſion; my Client having purchaſed an Eſtate in the Country, was forced to be there to look after the management of his Rural affairs, for ſome certain time: I took this opportunity to forge a Leaſe to my ſelf, at an eaſie Rent, from him that conſtituted me his Truſtee. I ſoon found a Chapman for it, and ſold this Leaſe, receiving a good round Fine, which had been a penny-worth indeed, had the title been good; unto this man I delivered poſſeſſion, who dwelt in it till the return of the right owner, who coming to his ſaid houſe, wonder'd to finde every thing ſo contrary to his expectation, & demanding of the Tenant by what power he inhabited in that dwelling, the poor man ſhewed him his forged Leaſe, declaring

claring that he had paid his fine to such a man, nominating me, who at that time was not to be found. The Landlord could do no less then eject him his house, but finding him so grosly abused, required nothing for the time he was in it, but left him to the Law to require satisfaction of me. The abused being very much troubled he should be thus deceived, made so strickt inquiry after me, and so unwearied in his search, that at last he found me out, who said, nothing should serve his turn, but he would for this cheat have the rigor of the Law executed upon me; knowing of what a dangerous consequence it was, I got my adversary arrested in an action of a thousand pounds, who wanting Bayl was committed to *Newgate*, where grief released me by his death from ensuing prejudice. I afterwards forged a deed of Sale of an House hard by the former, which would have made more for my advantage, had not this man discovered my design, which made me the more inveterate against him and his. For this was always my temper, though nothing could provoke me to express my anger in company (as having a perfect command over my passions in that nature) yet if any durst prosecute his own or friends right in opposition to me, I seldom left him, till I had either absolutely undone him, or so impoverisht him, that he should be in no condition to hurt me, or help himself, making him at last confess that he had been better to have sat down with his first loss. And this I effected the easier, having a conscience that scrupled nothing, & instruments that would swear any thing. These contrivances of

mine

mine made me generally reputed a *ſubtil* and *knowing man*, which brought me in multiplicity of buſineſs, with conſiderable in-comes. Neither did *I* alone ſollicite for ſuch as were concern'd in the Law, but *I* had my concernment with *Lifters*, who did put ſo great a confidence in me, that what they got was left ſolely to my diſpoſal, either by ſale or pawn, for which *I* had my brokage, and ſomething elſe beſide. Now was *I* grown ſo famous (my Garb adding much to my fame, which was very ſplendid) that if any intricate controverſie, reference, or Law-ſuit aroſe among my Neighbours, they knew no perſon fitter to make their appeal to then my ſelf for arbitration. If any again wanted either mony, goods, nay a *cooler* of concupiſcence, *I* was adjudged the beſt *Procurer*. By theſe means *I* tumbled in money; and to let the world know it, *I* wore a ſeveral Suit every day, having beſides Habits ſuitable to any deſign. Now did thoſe that knew me not, even adore me; thoſe that were acquainted with me, out of fear were forced to ſhow me more then ordinary reſpects. *I* confeſs had *I* now walkt in a *medium*, this had been the time (as they ſay there is a time allotted to every man) to have made my ſelf for ever. But Knaverie was ſo implanted in my Nature; that *I* could not forbear cheating the deareſt friend *I* had, if he intruſted me, circumvent every man that had more honeſty then my ſelf; and though *I* was ſure to damn ſoul and body, yet *I* muſt attempt the deſtruction of my adverſary; and to ſpeak the truth, *I* did not ſtick to betray my friend, if any advantage would accrue to me thereby. For one trick

I serv'd an ancient Widow, I now and then find some internal gripings, I cannot tell whether they proceed from conscience, because I never knew what conscience was; and this it is. A Gentlewoman of my acquaintance, whose sole dependance was upon Lodgers, and having taken up a great many Goods to a considerable value to furnish her House, befitting the reception of any person of quality, for which she was indebted, and having too often put off her Creditor, came to me, desiring the favour of me to procure her fifty pound, telling me, that such a Knight, and such a Squire would stand bound with her; that will not do (said I) for the Gentry have so many tricks to keep Citizens out of their money. That they will have better security. Perceiving her present necessities were very urgent, I knew I could do any thing with her; wherefore I perswaded her to confess a Judgement: she agreed to it. I told her such a day it should be done, but I would speak with the Party first: according to the day prefixt I came, bringing with me a Warrant of Attorny, with a friend or two to attest it; she confided so much in me, as to seal before she receiv'd the moneys. That being done; now come along with me (said I) to such a place, where the Mony lyeth ready. As we were going, there was a stop in a Lane by Carts & Coaches, and by the help thereof I dodg'd her, she seeing me no more till it was too late: for I came with an Execution a while after, and carried away every pennyworth of Goods she had; yet so civil I was, that I would not let her see it done, knowing it could not but be a great trouble

trouble to her, to that intent about half an hour before I ſent for her in my name, far enough diſtant from her own Habitation. In this nature with ſome variations as to the manner, *I* ſerv'd ſeveral. Knowing *I* had a plentiful invention, which ſeldom failed me, *I* ſcorned to be ſo idle as to make uſe of one trick only, to bring about my ends; & as *I* had ſeveral, *I* never made uſe of one trick twice, for fear of being *ſmoakt*. I ſeldom went abroad, but *I* had ſome of my Complices at my heels, rarely going together, unleſs neceſſity required it. I went into a *Coffee-houſe* one day, and ſat me down at a common Table, (as the Room is to all Comers) a little after came in one of my *Imps*, and ſits himſelf down too. I had then a very curious Ring upon my finger, which a Gentleman oppoſite to me perceiving, pray Sir (ſaid he) do me the favour as lend me a ſight of that Ring on your finger; I preſently delivered him; having viewed it and commended it, my Rogue muſt needs deſire a ſight of it too from this Gentleman, who thinking no harm, gave it into his hands; after he had lookt on it a while, he fairly march'd off with it: I ſaw him, but would not in the leaſt take notice thereof, knowing where to find him. The Gentleman imagined nothing to the contrary, but that the right Owner had received it again. A little while after, I demanded very courteouſly my Ring, excuſing his detention thereof upon the account of forgetfulneſs. The Gentleman ſtarting, replied, Sir, I thought you had had it long ſince. I told him I had it not; and as I delivered it unto him, I ſhould require it from no other perſon. He piſht at it, and

in

in the conclusion bad me take my course; and so I did, having first taken witness of the standers by, I sued him, and recovered the value of my Ring twice over; producing two in Court that swore point blank, that the one of them sold it me for so much---. One thing I confess I frequently made use of, which was this; If any person dy'd, and none durst administer, but leave the Deceased's Goods to the Creditors, then would I be sure to make my self a principal Creditor by a forged Bond, and thereupon sue out letters of administration, and sweeping all away, I wiped the nose of other Creditors.

CHAP.

CHAP. XL.

What a notable revengeful trick he serv'd the Turn-key of Ludgate.

I Went on a time to see a Prisoner in *Ludgate*, but thinking to come out again as easily as I went in, I found my self just as the Picture I have often seen upon the *Exchange*, wherein is represented a man plunging himself with much ease into the great end of the Horn, but with the greatest difficulty can hardly squeeze his Head through the other end. Hell Gates stand ever open to let all souls in, but none are suffer'd to go out. Here I waited two hours for the return of the Turn-key, fretting my self even to death for being detained from my urgent occasions. At length he came: I told him what an injury he did me: instead of excusing himself, he returned me very scurvy language, which provoked my passion so much, that though I said little, yet my invention was presently at work to be reveng'd. Not long after I got a poor fellow to be arrested for an inconsiderable debt, advising him to turn himself instantly over to *Ludgate*. In a short time the poorness of this mans condition was generally known, and he himself

ſelf pretending he was almoſt ſtarved, got liberty to put in what ſlender ſecurity he could procure for his true impriſonment, and ſo had leave to go abroad In the mean time *I* had got a Bond of the Priſoner of fourſcore pound for the payment of forty, and ſo went privately and enter'd an action of Debt. *I* told the Priſoner the next time he went out he ſhould run away, which he did, neither was there any ſecurity to be found; then did *I* bring my action againſt the Keeper, with my *Knights* of the *Poſt*, and ſo recovered the money.

CHAP. XLI.

What a freak he play'd upon a Jeweller.

I Was intimately acquainted with a Jeweller in *Foſter-lane*, whom *I* often helped to the ſale of Rings and Jewels, ſo that my credit was very good with him. Being one time above in his work-room, *I* chanced to ſpy a very rich Jewel, whereupon *I* told him *I* could help him to the ſale thereof; my Lady ſuch a one having lately ſpoke to me about ſuch a thing. He glady delivered it to me at ſuch a price to ſhew it her. But *I* only carried it to another to have one exactly made like it with counterfeit ſtones. Before I went, I askt him if the Lady diſlikt it, whether I might leave it with his wife or ſervant? I, I, (ſaid he) to either will be ſufficient. I was forced to watch one whole day to ſee when he went out; and being gone, preſently went to the Shop, and enquired of his Wife for her

Husband; ſhe anſwered me, he was but juſt gone. Well, Madam (ſaid *I*) you can do my buſineſs as well as he, 'tis onely to deliver theſe ſtones into your cuſtody; and ſo went off undiſcovered. Not long after I met him in the ſtreet, carrying diſpleaſure in his looks; Sir (ſaid he) I thought a friend would not have ſerv'd me ſo; but I deny'd it ſtifly. Whereupon he was very angry, and told me he would ſue me; *I* valu'd not his threats, and ſo left him; *I* had not gone many paces, before I met with a friend, that complain'd to me he had loſt a very valuable Locket of his Wives, it being ſtollen from her. Glad *I* was that this ſhould fall out ſo pat to my purpoſe; I askt him to give me a deſcription of it, which he did punctually. Now, ſaid I, what will you give me, if I tell you where it is? Any thing in reaſon. Then go to ſuch a Shop in *Foſter-Lane* (*the ſame Shop where I cheated the man of his Ring*) and there ask peremptorily for it; *I* was there at ſuch a time and ſaw it; and he would have had me help him to a Cuſtomer for it; *I'll* ſtay at the Star-Tavern for you. Away he went and demanded his Locket: The Jeweller deny'd he had any ſuch thing, (as well he might.) Upon this he returned to me, and (by this *I* had another with me) and told me what he ſaid. Whereupon *I* adviſed him to have a Warrant for him to fetch him before a Juſtice of Peace, and that *I* and my friend (which ſaw as much as *I*) would ſwear it. The Goldſmith was inſtantly ſeiz'd on by a Conſtable, and aſſoon as he ſaw who they were that would ſwear againſt him, deſired the Gentleman to drink a glaſs of wine, and then tender'd him ſatisfaction: But *I* had order'd the buſineſs that it would not be

be taken unleſs he would give us all three general releaſes. He knowing the danger that might enſue to life and eſtate if we perſiſted, conſented to the propoſal.

CHAP. XLII.

He puts a notable Cheat upon a Gentleman concerning his Houſe.

WAlking one time in the Fields with an Attendant or two, who would be conſtantly bare before me, if in company with any perſons of quality, but otherwiſe, *hail fellow well met*; I was got as far as *Hackney*, ere I thought where I was; for my thoughts were buſied about deſigns, and my wit was ſhaping them into a form; caſting my eye on the one ſide of me, I ſaw the prettieſt built and well ſcituated Houſe that ever my eyes beheld. I preſently had a covetous deſire to be Maſter thereof: I was then, as Fortune would have it, in a very gentile Garb; I walkt but a little way further, and *I* ſoon found out a Plot to accompliſh my deſires. And thus it was: *I* returned and knockt at the Gate, and demanded of the Servant whether his Maſter was within? *I* underſtood he was, and thereupon deſired to ſpeak with him. The Gentleman came out to me himſelf, deſiring me to walk in. After *I* had made a general Apology, *I* told him my buſineſs, which was only to requeſt the favour of him, that *I* might have the priviledge to bring a Workman to ſuperviſe his Houſe, and

to take the Dimenſions thereof, becauſe *I* was ſo well pleaſed with the Building, that *I* egerly deſired to have another built exactly after that pattern. The Gentleman could do no leſs then to grant me ſo ſmall a civility. Coming home, *I* went to a Carpenter, telling him *I* was about buying an Houſe in *Hackney*, and that *I* would have him accompany me to give me (in private) the eſtimate. Accordingly we went, and found the Gentleman at home, who entertained me kindly as a ſtranger. In the mean time the Carpenter took an exact account of the Butts and Bounds of the Houſe on Paper; which was as much as *I* deſired for that time.

Paying the Carpenter well, *I* diſmiſt him, and by that Paper had a Leaſe drawn with a very great fine (mentioned to have been paid) at a ſmall Rent; Witneſſes thereunto *I* could not want. Shortly after *I* demanded Poſſeſſion. The Gentleman thinking me out of my wits, only laught at me: *I* commenced my ſuit againſt him, and brought my own Creatures to ſwear the ſealing and delivering of the Leaſe, the Carpenters evidence, with many other probable Circumſtances to ſtrengthen my cauſe; whereupon *I* had a Verdict: The Gentleman underſtanding what *I* was, thought it ſafer to compound with me, and looſe ſomething, rather then looſe all.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIII

How he cheated a Scrivener under the pretence of bringing him good Security for an Hundred pound which he would borrow.

ATtiring my self in one of the richest Garbs *I* had, *I* went to a Scrivener in *Bow-lane*, and acquainted him *I* had an occasion for an Hundred pound. He demanded the Names of my Security. *I* told him where they lived, two persons of eminent worth (whom *I* knew were gone into the Country) and desired him to make enquiry, but in it to be private and modest. The Scrivener according to my desires went and found them by report to be what they were, real, able, and sufficient men: two or three days after *I* called upon him to know whether *I* might have the money upon the Security propounded. He told me *I* might, bringing the persons; and appointed me a day. According to the time *I* came with two of my Compliees attired like wealthy grave Citizens, who personated such persons so to the life, that the Scrivener could not entertain the least suspition. The money being ready, *I* told it over, and putting it up in a bag, *I* and my insignificant Bondsmen sealed, leaving the Scrivener to another enquiry after us, whom, if he did not meet, *I* was confident he could never find out by reason of our feigned Names.

It chanced that my forged and fictitious name

ſhook hands with that of a Gentleman in *Surry*, who was a great purchaſer, which *I* came to know by being accidentally in his company the next night after *I* had cheated this credulous Scribe, underſtanding likewiſe from him the exact place of his abode; and, as the Devil would have it, his Chriſtian name was the ſame, as well as his Sirname, with that of mine *I* had borrowed. Whereupon *I* went to the Scrivener again, and told him that now *I* had a fair opportunity to benefit my ſelf very much by a purchaſe, provided he would aſſiſt me with 200 pound more. But Sir, ſaid *I*, take notice (in a careleſs and generous frankneſs) that it is out of a particular reſpect to you, that you might profit by me that *I* come, again, neither will *I* now give you any other Security then my own Bond, though *I* did otherwiſe before. But if you will deſire to be ſatisfied as to my Eſtate, pray let your ſervant go to ſuch a place in *Surry*, there is a piece of Gold to bear his charges, and *I* will ſatisfie you farther for the loſs of your Servants time. He being greedy of gain, very officiouſly promiſed me to do what *I* required, and would ſpeedily give me an anſwer. Imagining what time his Servant would return, I repaired to him again, and underſtood from him by the ſequel that he received as much ſatisfaction as in reaſon any man could require. Hereupon I had on my own Bond the money paid me. I cannot but laugh to think how ſtrangely the *Surry* Gentleman was ſurprized when the money becoming due was demanded of him, and how like the figure of man in Hangings the Scrivener lookt when he found himſelf cheated.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIV.

How he was revenged on a Broker for arresting him for some Goods he had past his word for upon his friends accompt.

NOtwithstanding I daily thus almost cheated one or other, procuring thereby considerable sums of money, yet, by my Drinking, Whoreing, and defending my self from such as I had wronged, I seldom kept any money by me. One day as I walk'd the streets securely, as I thought, a fellow fastned his *Flesh-Hooks* on my Shoulder. Looking about to see what this sudden *clap* meant, I saw a fellow behind me, whose face lookt ten times worse then those *Philistines* that are pictured on Chimny-pieces, seizing upon *Samson*; his mouth was as largely vaulted as that within *Alder*sgate; his Visage was almost eaten through with Pock-holes, every hole so big, that they would have served for Children to play at Cherry-pit. His Nose resembled an Hand-saw; take both Head and face together, and it appeared like the Saracens on *Snow-hill*; questionless some *Incubus* begot him on a Witch. Having a little recovered my self from my amazement, I askt him what his business was with me? He spake but little, leaving his errand to his Mace (which he shew'd me) to relate. Away they carried me to *Woodstreet* at the Kings-head, from whence I sent for Bail, which speedily came to me: having put in Bail to one Action, I found another enter'd: having done

the like to that *I* found another, half a dozen more bearing it company; wherefore thanking my friends for the trouble *I* had put them to, *I* deſired them to leave me, reſolving to go to *Ludgate*. The two Serjeants that arreſted me conducted me thither, having my name enter'd in the Paper-houſe, as Horſes in *Smithfield* are in the Tole-booth: *Cerberus* turned the Key, and ſet the door as wide open as *Weſtminſter*-Hall Gate in the Term-time to Country clients, to receive me from my Hell-guides, which puts me in mind of that old Verſe,

Noctes atque dies patet atri janua ditis.

I no ſooner was enter'd into this inchanted Iſle, where ſome lie wind-bound ſometimes ſeven years together, but a fellow (whom at firſt ſight I took to be a Gardner, becauſe he had a kind of *Reddiſh* beard, *and turn'd up* withal) came to me, & underſtanding *I* was a Priſoner ſeem'd mighty courteous, profering me his Chamber, for my Garniſh ſake. *I* accepted his kindneſs, & went with him to view this Cobweb-hung-Chamber, for ſo it proved; *I* demanded of him who ſhould be my Bedfellow? that Gentleman there Sir, ſaid he, that ſits by the fire ſide: *I* could not forbear ſmiling, for he was a fat ſquobby fellow, though his brain ſeemed to be lean. *I* believe he was his own Barber, and was forc'd to make uſe of a Knife inſtead of a Razor; for his beard it was cut round like a rubbing-bruſh. Certainly, had all the skin of his body been like that of his face, it would have ſerved excellent well when he was dead to make cloke-bags of. Not content with this lodging, *I* ſought out another; liking it ſomewhat better then the for-

former, I pitcht on it. Assoon as they understood my resolution, they worried me presently like angry Mastiffs, barking for their Garnish; *I* told them they should have it to morrow, at which they grumbled like the greatest strings of a Base-Viol. Before *I* went to Bed *I* must pay for a pair of sheets, that never came nigh *Holland* by three hundred miles, and out of much civility my Bedfellow brought me a candle not so long as his nose to light me to Bed.

The next morning *I* made it my business to get out assoon as *I* could; some *I* paid, others *I* non-suited, and so got clear. Being out *I* resolved not to rest till *I* had revenged my self on this Broker that had thus troubled me. *I* needed not means, for the Devil seldom failed to help my inventions. *I* pretended to go into the Country, and in order to it pack'd up a Trunk of what *I* had most valuable and portable, and getting a Porter, sent it to an Inn where a *Norwich*-Carryer used to lye, but *I* knew him to be gone the day before. Going along with the Porter, *I* enquired for such a Carryer, but they told me he was gone, and would not return till the next week. *I* askt them where *I* might lay my Trunk safe: they shewed me a Room; where bidding the Porter sit down, I called for some Ale, telling the Porter, moreover, that *I* would have him be a witness of what there was in the Trunk, lest *I* should be dishonestly dealt by; whereupon *I* unlockt it, desiring him to take notice, which he did, & to be more sure took an Inventory in Writing. Having paused a little, now *I* think upon it (said *I*) Porter, it will not be so safe to leave this here in a publique house as in a friends, wherefore prethee

go buy a Cord, and thou ſhalt carry it elſewhere. Whileſt he was gone, I took out the chiefeſt things and put iu rubbiſh, or what I could get, and ſo lockt it again. The Potter returning, we corded the Trunk, and carried it to this Broker, who took it kindly from me, that I would intruſt him after our controverſie, and received it. The next week I told him I would call for it, in order to the ſending it into the Country. The time being come, I took the ſame Porter with me, and demanding the Trunk, it was forthwith delivered me. Come, Porter, ſaid I, you muſt uncord it again, for I have preſent uſe for ſomething therein contain'd; which being done, I ſeemingly amaz'd, cry'd out I was rob'd, taxing the Broker for ſo doing, villifying him for his knavery. He proteſted that he never lookt on it to his knowledge ſince the receipt thereof. Well Sir (ſaid I) this ſhall not ſerve your turn, this honeſt Porter knows how differently it is fraught from what he ſaw it at firſt. In a great ſeeming heat I left him, but before he ſlept I ſent a couple of Serjeants to him, who arreſted him; coming to tryal, by the aſſiſtance of two (reſolv'd Jurors) and this Porter, I overthrew him, and recovered above forty pound, beſides coſt of Suit.

CHAP. XLV.

How he cozened a rich Uſurer, and a young Tradeſman.

BEing reſolved to go and look out ſome of my Conſorts to rejoyce together for my good ſucceſs

ſucceſs in my advantagious revenge, I met with an old comrade that had lately *heav'd a Booth, Anglicè* broken open a Shop, who told me he had a quantity of good comodities,& deſired me to put them off for him, knowing that I dealt in Brokeage in goods indirectly come by: I promis'd him I would. The next day he delivered what he had into my hands, I inſtantly carried them to an old Uſurer that would graſp at any thing, telling him I only deſired to Mort-gage them for ſuch a time, requeſting to lend me fifty pounds thereon. He looking upon them to be thrice the value of that ſum, lent me freely the quantity of mony propounded,& in my ſight took the Goods and laid them in a place next his Bed-chamber. The ſame day I met with this friend, who demanded of me whether I had done his buſineſs? No, not yet (ſaid I) it will be to morrow firſt: However let us drink a glaſs of wine, which he readily conſented to. Having drank pretty ſmartly, he could not contain himſelf (ſo powerful are the operations of Wine, as it frequently makes a man divulge that which carrieth in it inevitable ruine) I ſay he told me whoſe Shop it was he rob'd, and at what time. I ſeem'd to take little notice then, though I intended to make good uſe of it. Parting with him, I went ſtreight way to the perſon rob'd, & told him that accidentally I was inform'd of his late loſs, and that my intent of coming was out of a principle of honeſty, to aſſiſt him in the recovery of what was ſtollen from him. But before I acquainted him with any thing I required of him a Bond of 10 l. if I helpt him to his Goods; which he granted me. I adviſed him to get the Lord chief Juſtices warrant, which he did, and

ta-

taking some friends with him, I directed them where they should go, and in what place they should find them. He would have had me gone with him, but that I excused my self, alledging it would be inconvenient. Taking a Constable with them, they went & found what they sought for according to my direction, which they seiz'd, leaving the old man to condole his loss, which had been no great matter had not his life lain in his Purse.

Having thus carried on my mischievous contrivances with continued impunity; the next I fell on was a young Merchant, to whom I went gentily habited, with a foot-boy waiting at my heels. I lookt out several Commodities, and laid them aside, assuring him that I would e're long lay out a considerable parcel of money with him. We discours'd upon the price, & in the conclusion closed. The next day I appointed the Goods to be sent home to my House, and in the interim desired him to go along with me, and accept of what poor accommodation my habitation would afford him, under the pretence of being better acquainted, but my design was to raise in him a good opinion of me, for I had one room (especially) very richly hung with costly Furniture. My motion was entertained, and away we went, where I treated him nobly; the next day the Commodities were sent in with his Servant, who expected his money, but I pretended that my Cashier was abroad, and so desired him to call the next morning; he did, but then I was not to be spoken with. Thus he did so often till the young man was weary. At last the Master himself came, who met me just as I was going out; who had not the patience to ask for his money

money, but presently railed most bitterly, calling me cheat, knave, &c. and that he would not put himself to the trouble of posting me up, but would have a Warrant for me instantly.

Being gone, I was as nimble as himself, having a couple of my Emissaries ready for him against his return. It was not long before he came strutting with a Constable. Perceiving him coming, I sent my two friends out with their Warrant, and putting it into the Constables hand, charged him in the Kings name to execute it upon such a one, meaning the Merchant; who dared not deny it, but carried him before a Justice, before whom my two Rogues swore flat felony, and so was committed. Sending for friends, they advised him to make an end thereof. Whereupon I was much solicited; and upon consideration *I* consented to cause my friends to forbear prosecution.

As yet I have not fully unbowell'd the huge bulk of my villany, that hath proved so burdensome to the world, and destructive to so many Families; wherefore give me leave a little farther to anatomize my own vicious nature, and *I* shall so lay open the ulcers and sores of my impostumed machinations, apparent to the sight of every one, that the most Osprey and Owl-eyed spectator shall confess there never was a more necessary and commodious discovery revealed.

Brother, said *I*, for so *I* must call you now, your *flagitious* deeds claiming that title, & must be compell'd *I* see to give you superiority, the upperhand, for *I* am confident the line of other mens inventions never sounded the Sea of a more deep and dreadful mischief. When *I* consider how powerful

ful and imperious vice is of late grown; and what horrid facts are committed every where by licentious and wicked men that ſwarm in all places: I admire that the Fabrick of the Earth is not continually palſyed by Earth-quakes, ſince there is a Creator above that overſees ſuch actions. That the Earth her ſelf (though an indulgent Mother) doth not receive into her Womb her off-ſpring, and therein for ſhame hide them: that the air is not choaked with Froggs, and that black pitchy miſts do not perpetually maſque the face of Heaven, and leave the World in obſcurity; and that the Sun doth not hide his face from ſeeing ſuch enormous crimes blacker then is the Eclipſe of his countenance: and laſtly, that the Sea is not turned to blood to put us in mind of the cruel and remorſeleſs uſages of one another; our kindneſs being commonly attended with diſcourteſies of a Vermilion hue. Thus Brother you ſee I am ſenſible of my miſcarriages, but want the power to regulate my life. I would have proceeded, but that I found this diſcourſe grated in his ears; wherefore I deſired him to proſecute his ſtory, which he did in this manner.

CHAP. XLVI.

He discovers the subtlety of some Citizens he had to do withal by Broking for them, relating his own craft and cunning, and what the consequent was, the ruine of young Gentlemen.

Like an Hawk as I told you, I flew at all Game, not confining my self to any one thing particularly; where I could abuse the Law, I did; and if I had an opportunity to Trepan, I seldome failed, *&c.* Some part of my time I spent in the enquiry of what young Heirs were arrived, into whose society I was sure by one means or other to insinuate my self. These Country Wood-cocks I knew how to catch with a City Springe; whom I very well understood, had rather be out of the world then out of the fashion, who would be brave for the present time, though their Gallantry cost them all their future Fortunes. I commonly laid my plot thus: Sir, you undervalue your self by the meanness of your Habit, it being so unsuitable to your quality: if you want money, you cannot want credit, having a fair promising estate in reversion; if you are willing, *I* will find you out a believing Mercer. Returning me many thanks, it may be he would be in such hast as to send me presently. He could not be so eager to have his gaudy desires satisfied, as *I* forward to accomplish them. *I* knew

knew where to go readily to one, with whom I went snips; in so saying, I would not have any think I throw dirt upon that noble profession. If I discover the fraud of any particular person, as long as I name him not, I do him no wrong; but if I detect by what deceitful and sinister means he worketh upon the infirmity of the youth of a green-witted Gallant, it may serve for an *use of instruction*. In the most famous Universities there are some Dunces resident, that by disgracing themselves, disgrace also their fellow Students. In the most virtuous Courts there will be some Parasits. So in the most goodly and glorious City under Heavens Canopy, there are some Asps lurking, that sting the reputation of their Brethren by their poysonous and corrupt dealings. There are knaves in all *Trades* but *Book-selling*.

But to my purpose: a young Gentleman coming out of *Norfolk* to see the City, & finding so many (beneath him in estate) gallant it so much above him, he grew very melancholy: hapning to be in his company, and indifferently well acquainted with him, I askt him the cause of his sadness? after I had prest him very much, he ingeniously confest the true original of his pensiveness. Pish, said I, is that all? let me alone to effect what you desire; neither shall you wait longer then the morrow. Leaving my Gentleman, away I went to a person fit for my purpose, & gave him an account of my business: glad he was, thankt me for my pains, promising me a reward, and would needs have me to a Tavern to consult this affair. Having concluded every thing, I repaired the next day to my Gentleman, who over-joyed to see me, was impa-

impatient to know whether his wishes were consummated. Come along with me, said I, and we will try what we can do. I have been very importunate with the Mercer, but as yet I cannot mollifie him, it may be your presence may do much. Finding him in the Shop, I called him aside, and told him this was the Gentleman. My young Gentleman that would be gallant presently, fell aboard him (and with much fervency and protestations) he wooed the Mercer to credit him for 30 l. worth of commodities. I called him aside, saying, What will 30 l. worth do? take up 100 l. worth, and what you use not, I will dispose by sale, to furnish your Pockets with money. He thankt me kindly for my advice, and returned to the Mercer, who ask'd him, if he should credit him with so much, what security would he propound? This struck my young Gentleman as dumb as a Cods-head. The Mercer perceiving he had nothing to say, plaid the Rope-maker, being extream backward to trust him; Bonds he refused, Judgments he would not hear of, Statutes he scorned: For, said he, Gentlemen of late have found out so many tricks to couzen their Creditors (I by the same means having had several collops cut from the body of my estate) that I will not credit any more: whereas he spake this only to grind the blunt appetite of my Commodity-taker into a sharper edge, and make him more greedy of his own ruine; imitating in this a cunning and deceitful, though peculant and wanton Curtezan, who is nice when a sick-brain'd young Gallant importunes her to admit of his amorous kindness, only to make him more fierce upon his own confusion: holding him off like a Fencer, a month or two, that he may come up the roundlier to her purpose. But to the matter. My Gentleman being in a manner denied, I seconded him thus; Sir, you know not what you do in refusing to credit this Gentleman; he is his Fathers heir, a man of a vast estate, and very aged: This his son is about a very great match, a rich heiress, and though he

hath not mony for the preſent, yet let him have an hundred pounds worth of Commodities, you need not doubt your payment, and it will do him at this preſent a 1000 pounds worth of good. The Mercer began to hearken to this, and proteſted to my Green-gooſe, that he would be glad to do any a pleaſure, ſo as not to injure himſelf; that if he could but poſſeſs him with a belief that he ſhould have his mony in ſix months, he would freely let him have an hundred pounds worth of what he pleaſed: the young Gentleman proteſted, and I warranted it; and the Mercer (though ſeemingly loath) condeſcended, upon this proviſo ſtill, that he ſhould procure ſome man elſe to be bound with him as good as himſelf; For, ſaid he, we are all mortal, and having not a leaſe of our lives, we may die before to morrow; where is then my 100 l.? Signior Unthrift is once more put to his *non-plus*, but at length fell to intreat me, who would not by any means, and ſo we parted. He would not let me reſt for two or three days together, ſo that at laſt, provided he would give me ten pound, I would: agreed, we went again to the Mercer, and entring into Bonds, we had the commodities. Having made my young Gentleman an abſolute Gallant, I went to ſell what was left, of which I made 40 l. but I made my Gallant to be contented with 30 l. alledging, that when goods come once to be ſold, they will not yeild the moiety of what they coſt, though new: and out of that 30 l. I had my 10 l. for ſuretyſhip. Thus I perſwaded him to be very well ſatisfied. He revels about, whilſt I was contriving to leave him as bare of means as Brains. Now doth my Mercer dream of nothing but his pay-day, which he hoped would be broken. The time being expired, and my young Novice not minding it, the Mercer invited him to a dinner in *Fiſh-ſtreet*: dinner being almoſt ended, for a third courſe came up a couple of *Sergeants* ſtewed with *Mace*, who arreſted him at the ſuit of the Founder of the Feaſt; not procuring Bail, he was carried to the Counter, where he lay

ſome

some time: his friends hearing thereof, endeavour'd to get him out, by an *Audita querela*; my Mercer hearing thereof, 'advised with me what was best to be done. Agree, said I, with some Officer in the Exchequer, and so turn the debt over to the King, pretending you owe him so much mony; for the Chancery will not, or cannot allow any thing in such a case against his Majesty. He so doing, his business was done for the present. Thus have I read, when the Jews have bought a red-hair'd Boy, at first they will cloath him in silks, ravishing him with all the delights that can be thought on, never have Musick from his ears, or banquets from his taste; and thus use him, till they see he is plump, fat, and fit for their purpose: but when the poor Boy least thinks of his imminent ruine, he is taken by a brace of slaves, and tied up by the heels, so beaten by degrees to death with cudgels, purging the rankest poyson out of his mouth, and making Mummy of his flesh. I shall leave it to the Reader to make application. In short, I perswaded the Mercer to take a Bond of 500 l. of his Prisoner, to be paid after his fathers decease. This Widgeon being in the nets, sealed to any thing for his liberty. He was not the first so served, by thousands. And that is the reason there are so many crested Citizens: for Gentlemen being begger'd by their extortion, they have no other means then to fall in with their Wives, purchasing from them a supply. This is it that makes the Roads every where so full of High-way-men, who will borrow of men when they have little mind to lend, but not without giving them Bonds. This makes *Tyburn*, the Metropolitan, and other petty Gallowses, have so many hangers on; and this is the cause so many such Citizens sons are plagued after their Fathers deaths, as their Fathers, when living, have plagued others. These are the Boars that plow up whole Acres, nay, Fields of Gentlemens Lands with their Snouts; these are the Swine that eat up whole Orchards, and these are they whose fiery consciences drink up whole

Fish-ponds at a draught; and lastly, they are the *Hurry-canes* that root up the trees of whole woods together. From such, *Libera nos Domine.*

To conclude, take this as an infallible Maxime, that the worst of Creditors are either very rich men, or very poor men: The rich man can stay for his mony, and therefore will have all or none; the poor man to be sure will have no pity, neither do I see how he should, for it may be the debt is all he is worth.

CHAP. XLVII.

How he insinuated himself into the acquaintance of all he thought he could prey upon, and what tricks he used to build his interest upon their ruine.

HOw can that *Tyrant* flourish in his Commonwealth, when the foundation of his Reign was built on the Sepulchre of the right and lawful Heir he murther'd? And how can that man prosper, whose rise he rear'd from other mens ruines? Such was I, who having oftentimes been gulled by Knaves, turned Knave my self, and did as greedily hunt after such I could make a prey of, (to repair the damages I had sustain'd by others) as the devil doth after Usurers souls, being on their death-beds, resolving to live like a Bandite on the spoil. Like an old Souldier having been beaten to the world, (or indeed more properly, beaten by the world) I began to summon up all my senses and my idle brains to a strict account, how to get that up again, my riot and folly had spent; and thinking I had no way to recover my self, but by what ruined me, I did cast about me, and fished after this manner. I prepared my lines, providing baits, and made ready my hooks, which had such constant and firm barbs, that after I had struck a Gudgeon in the gills, I was sure to hold him, though I suffer'd him to play a little in the stream. The Flouds I daily frequented, were either the Temple, Ordinaries, Play-houses, Cock-pits, Brothels, or Taverns, leaving no place unsearch'd, wherein there might be any thing worthy a Bait. If such I found, like a shadow I was never from his heels, but followed him close, especially if he was a young Country-Gentleman, whom his father had sent up to see fashions in the Citie: and rather then he should go out as raw as he came in, I fail-

ed not to season him in one of the Cities Powdering-Tubs. First, I made it my business to know what his Father allowed him; then would I studie his natural disposition and inclination, and accordingly fute my self to him, so that by my behaviour towards him, he should look upon me to be his *Masculine Sweet-heart*, his bosom-friend, and that like *Hippocrates* twins, we must needs live and die together. Having now by much sweat and industrie adapted and fitted him to my humour and purpose, and wrought him to such a soft and waxen temperature, that I could make what impression I pleased on him, I brought him acquainted with some of my accomplices, who all vail'd bonnet to him, invited him from Tavern to Tavern, not letting him expend a penny; or if he wanted money, I would supply him with four or five pound. This Innocent (not having yet scented the Citie-air) all this while thinks himself in *Elysium*, fancying he enjoys more delights then the *Turks Paradise* affords, and withal imagineth himself not a little graced, to be entertained amongst such seeming Gallants. For my Rogues (give me the libertie to call them so) lookt on it as the greatest piece of policie to wear good cloaths, though their pockets were worse furnished then a Chandlers box, that seldom hath any greater money in it, then Two-pence, Three-pence, Groats, *&c.* Sometimes my Cullie did meet with such (that knew me) who would advise him to have a care and not to keep me companie, for I was a dangerous person, and in the end would ruine him. Whereas it was to little purpose: for when Youth is in its full vigour, and height of desire, neither wholesom counsel, nor lamentable examples, will give them warning of their future destruction. Still I continued my seeming respects and kindnesses to him, which I onely intended as the *Præludium* or Prologue to that *Play* which was to come after: for my *Country Cock-brain* being honeyed with these sweet delights, thought that whatever he

he could return, was not able to give an answerable satisfaction. Watching a fit opportunitie (when he is well warm'd with wine) then would I perswade him, (which was no difficult matter) to be bound with me for so much, *&c.* which I promised I would repay at the day, without putting him to any inconvenience: but he knew not, that what I borrowed for an hour, I borrowed for an age. When I could squeeze no more juice out of him, then I left him to the mercy of his Creditors, to be dealt withal as the *Popinjay* in the Fable, who being summoned to appear with the rest of the winged Tribe, before their King the Eagle, borrowed of all the finer sort of Birds feathers to adorn him, and make him appear splendid before his Soveraign. After he wat dismiss'd, he proudly flutter'd up and down the woods with his borrow'd gallantry, which made the little Titmouse, Wren, and Hedge-Sparrow adore him. They to whom he was obliged for his gallantry, hearing thereof, demanded again their own, and so deplum'd him, whereby he seem'd ten times worse then those small birds that lately did admire him. Such *Popinjays* are they, who borrow of every Citizen, to make themselves shew glorious in the worlds eye; but when their Creditors shall come and claim their own, and get it, they will seem more foul then lately they did fair. So various and villanous were the pranks I committed every day, that I was forced now, like an Owl, to appear only by night in the Citie. If I did at any time transgress that custom, I did then as the dogs of *Egypt*, when they come to drink of the river *Nilus*, lap here and there, and dare not stay long in one place, for fear the Crocodiles that lie lurking within the Banks, should pull them into the current: so did I, skulking here and there, then to one Tavern; and not daring to stay longer there, shifted to another. But to proceed.

CHAP. XLVIII.

How he could make Ink that would diſappear from the Paper, accordingly as he pleaſed, by the ſtrength or weakneſs of the compoſition. His imitating exactly both Hand and Seal. A remarkable Story thereupon.

READing one time a book that an Italian writ, I found therein a deſcription of ſeveral ſorts of Ink, and how to make them; but more eſpecially, an Ink that ſhould laſt a week, a month, or two, according to the compoſition. I made an experiment, and found it hit indifferently well: perceiving how beneficial this would be to me, I reſolved not to reſt till I had found out the true Receipt; which I did at laſt, by much ſtudy and induſtry. Having obtain'd it, I ſo highly valued it, that methought I would not have parted with it for the *Philoſophers Stone*. Not to be tedious, I did abuſe therewith many perſons with Bonds, Leaſes, Deeds, Acquittances, *&c.* there appearing in ſuch a time nothing but the bare Seal, the paper remaining as white as if never writ on. By the help of Graving, I could counterfeit Seals exactly, inſomuch that I have often cheated the *Grand Cheater, Oliver*, the late hypocritical and bloudy Tyrant; and by an exact imitation of an hand-writing, his Council was too too ſenſible of what Cheats I put upon them. That I was no bungler at it, I ſhall give you this inſtance. Accidentally coming acquainted with a Gentlewoman, very beautiful and well featur'd, her ſparkling eyes ſet me all in a flame, ſo that I reſolved to attempt the enjoyment of her. Oftentimes I viſited her, and by the modeſty of my carriage towards her, ſhe perceived not my burning luſt. One time having a fit opportunity, ſhe being alone, I communicated

ted my thoughts to her: waving what amorous discourse past on my side, I would have fallen roundly to the matter; but she understanding my intent, cry'd out; whereupon I desisted, seeing it was to little purpose if I proceeded. Sitting down by her, she expresst an absolute hatred to me for my incivility, and vow'd she would neither see nor endure me more. The vehemence of her utterance and countenance fully declared she was in earnest; so that I saw 'twas time to be gone. Looking about (unperceived by her) I took up half a sheet of paper of her writing, and clapt it into my pocket; and so took my leave. Coming home, I found my love converted into hatred, and therefore vowed my revenge: and thus it was. I understood from her, whereabout her husband liv'd, and what his Christian name was, with something of her concerns; that her husbands mother could not endure her, (because her son married her without a portion, though a wise, discreet, vertuous, and handsome woman) and whereabout she lived, with name, *&c.* I counterfeited a Letter, as from this vertuous Gentlewoman, to a Gallant of hers, taxing him with want of love, and that if he proved not more constant, she had no more to say to him, *&c.* The contents you shall have in the Letter it self, as followeth.

Most beloved by me of men!

I cannot blame you so much as my self: it is customary for man to proffer, but then it should be a womans duty to refuse: but alas! how could I withstand the powerful perswasions of your eloquent tongue, especially when they carried with them so much seeming reality of affection and constancy? I finde you now like other vow-breaking men, who having obtained the fruition of their desires, their appetite nauseates that which before it so eagerly crav'd. Call to minde those many endeared and melting expressions you did voluntarily utter,

ter, when I was encircled in thine arms; and if that will not reduce you to your former ſtation, and good eſteem of me, now ſo much ſlighted by you, conſider that I have preferred you in love before my Husband, not caring how much I wronged him to pleaſure you. If nothing will prevail, know then, this ſhall be my reſolution, that ſince you have alienated my affection from my Husband, and you thus unworthily deſert me, I will procure a Subject elſewhere ſhall out-do you in every thing, as much or more as you have out-done my Husband. I am young, plump, handſome, and buckſome; what then ſhould hinder me from enjoying ſuch a perſon, my heart will not reſt ſatisfied till I have found? which having done, he ſhall lead me in thy view, and then it is probable you will deſire, but never ſhall reaſſume your place again within my breaſt. Farewel.

This Letter was ſent to her Mother-in-law in the Country, who was glad ſhe had matter to impeach her daughter to her ſon. Aſſoon as he ſaw the Letter, he very well knew the hand, he thought, and would have ſworn it to be his wifes: but reading the contents, the poor man was ready to ſink down for grief. Perturbation of minde would not let him reſt in his Country-dwelling, but rid up Poſt to *London*, where he ſoon found out his wife. The unexpected ſight of him at firſt ſurpriſed her, not hearing of his coming, and knowing that his occaſions were very urgent in the Country; however, like a truly-loving wife, ſhe was overjoy'd to ſee him, and would have kiſs'd him, but that he rudelie thruſt her off; which action ſtruck her to the heart, and overwhelm'd her in amazement. Prethee Sweetheart (ſaid ſhe) what is the matter? There, read it, ſaid he, throwing her the Letter. She read it, and ſwounded: he let her lie, not caring whether ſhe liv'd or dy'd; and had dy'd indeed, had not her Maid come up accidentally. Being recovered, he ask'd her whether it was her hand,

hand. She could not deny it: which made the man rage, ready to run out of his wits, whilst she was silent with astonishment, taking such inward grief, that she betook her self to her bed. Nothing could comfort her, neither would she take any thing to sustain life. Hearing how powerfully my forgeries had wrought, to the hazard of somes lives; in the same hand I sent him a Letter, wherein I gave him an account of the designe, proclaiming to the world the Gentlewomans honesty, unspotted and unstain'd. The Gentlewoman recover'd in a little time after; but this trick had too much seiz'd upon my Gentleman; for like a fool he fell distracted in a sneering posture, as pleas'd to think his wife was honest *not withstanding*. I have been somewhat long in this relation, because it was a passage very remarkable. Now I shall tell you how I cheated a young Citizen and an Upholster.

CHAP. XLIX.

How he cheated a young Citizen newly set up, and an Upholster.

A Young Citizen about to set up, and wanting some money, was directed to me, to procure so much as his present occasion required. I treated him very civilly, promising him very fairly; and in order thereunto, appointed him a day; which being come, contrary to my expectation or desire, he brought a crew with him, to see the receipt of the money. Judging this time inconvenient for my designes, I told him I exp'cted the money this very day; but if he pleased to seal the Bond, and have it witnessed, he might keep it himself; and bringing the Bond with him the next day, he should not fail to have his money. The next day he came to the place appointed, where I was ready to wait him. As good fortune would have it, he came alone. I discours'd with him a while: at last I desired him to let me see the Bond; which he delivered into my hand, being sign'd and seal'd be-

before. I took this as a good and lawful livery, and put it up into my pocket. He asked me what I meant. I told him he ſhould know when the Bond became due. Why Sir, ſaid he, you will not ſerve me ſo? Doſt thou think I am ſuch a fool (ſaid I) to lend thee ſo much money upon a piece of Paper, which next ſhowre of rain will waſh away with thy ſelf into the common ſhore? Shall I truſt thee, when thou canſt not truſt thy ſelf? At this the young man began to be clamorous; but one of my accomplices ſoon ſtill'd the *clapper* of his mouth, by a ſound knock on the pate, which laid him aſleep: and in the mean time we marcht off. Juſt as the money came due upon the Bond, my flock-pated *Cit* was gone to tell his friends in the country the danger of Counters and priſons in the Citie. Wanting another time ſome money to ſupply my preſent occaſions, I could not think of any ſtratagem for the preſent to aſſiſt me in this neceſſity, but to ſell my featherbed, with furniture thereunto belonging. Packing them up, I got a friend to go along with the Porter, and ſell them to an Upholſter. Which my friend did, bringing me half their worth; but withal, that which was more then the whole worth, the name of the perſon. A week afterwards, wanting my bed, I reſolved to have it again. Whereupon I went to him that bought it, asking him before a couple I carried along with me, whether at ſuch a time there were not ſuch commodities ſold him. He acknowledged there was. I deſired to ſee them: and he as readily granted that. Sir, ſaid I, theſe are my goods: I was lately rob'd, and now I know you are the receiver: I muſt have you before a Juſtice, to know how you came by them. The naming of a Juſtice ſo terrified this ſimple ſilly fellow, that he bid me take them if I would ſwear they were mine, and put him to no further trouble. Firſt I ſwore they were my goods, (and therein I was not perjur'd) but I told him I could not receive ſtollen goods ſafely, though they were my own. In ſhort, I got my bed and furniture thereunto again, with money to boot.

CHAP.

CHAP. L.

He is at last met withal, and laid up in Prison by one of his Creditors. The abuses and tricks Sergeants use to arrest men. Lastly, he escapes, by putting a trick upon his Keeper.

HAving gone thus far without any remarkable check or controul, at least any such as might bear a proportion with the villanies and injuries I had done; I absolutely thought that nothing was dishoneſt or difficult that had in it either pleaſure or profit. Meeting with no moleſtation or hinderance, I took my freedom to do even what I liſted. One time thinking my ſelf moſt ſecure, I then found my ſelf in the greateſt danger, being arreſted in an Action of 5000 l. Several times there were attempts made to take me, but I was ſtill too cunning for them: yet at laſt they over-reacht me; it will not be amiſs to relate in what manner. They had information, that every week I had Letters come to me out of *Eſſex*, and that the Porter which brought them had ſtill free admittance to me: wherefore the Serjeant provided himſelf a Frock, and a Rope about his middle, which would better have become his neck, and with Letters in his hand directed to me, trudged to my lodging. Knocking at my door, and being demanded his buſineſs, he told them he had Letters for the maſter of the houſe, nominating me. Looking out, and ſeeing no one but a ſeeming Porter, I order'd that he ſhould be let in. Aſſoon as he was enter'd, he bid my Worſhip good morrow, and in ſtead of delivering me his Letters, ſhewed me his Mace; which I wiſht might be the onely ſpice and meat too he ſhould eat for a twelvemonth. Seeing how I was betraid, I went quickly along with him to the Compter; and afterwards, finding I could make no compoſition with my Creditors, turned my ſelf over to the *Kings-Bench*. Various are their tricks and inventions to enſnare whom they intend to arreſt. Sometimes I have known a Creditor ſeem to comply with his Debtor, telling him that paying

ing some inconsiderable matter, his Bonds should be renewed with longer time: then appoint him a place of meeting, where he saith he will bring a Counsellor and Scrivener; a Counsellor to advise them in management of their business, and a Scrivener to write what they determine. He acquainted a Sergeant and a Yeoman with his Plot, who were as hot upon it, as an *Italian* on a Wench of 15. The Serjeant going with a Barristers Gown on his back, and the Yeoman with his beard cut as close as a stubble field, with a Pen in his ear, and some Parchment in his hand, effected their design without suspicion. A Merchant I knew, that intended to break and go beyond Sea, was betraid by his servant, who informed his Creditors that at such a time his Mr. would be gone: that on the morrow he would send for Coopers to hoop some dry-fats to pack his goods; and that if ever they hoped to have their money, they must make that their time. Some Serjeants were presently acquainted herewith, who attired like Coopers in red Caps, canvase Breeches, with Ads in their hands, and Hoops about their shoulders, went to the Merchant, and were entertained; whilst he was giving them direction; but in stead of hooping the dry-fats, they hoopt him in their arms, and arrested him. Before they parted with him, they made him part with so much money as would satisfie his Creditors and them; and made him see them besides, not then to enter any more Actions against him. They will change themselves into as many shapes as *Proteus*, to bring about their designe: sometimes like a grand wealthy Citizen, othertimes like a Country-fellow newly come to town, with boots and spurs all dirty. Now as I have related their manner of arresting, so let me briefly inform you of their using (or rather abusing) prisoners. First they enquire of the person whether this be the first time he was arrested: if so, then they know the better how to deal with him. Perhaps they will carry him to the Tavern, pretending to do him kindness, where they will

will advise him to send for some friend; and one of them will be the Porter himself; but in stead of fetching the friend, he only enquires out his Creditors, and perswades them to use this opportunity to recover their debt: mean while, the other that is left behind doth *milk* him. The messenger returning, sorrowfully tells him his friend is not at home. Getting as much as they can by spunging, and sucking the very *heart-blood* of his pocket, the Compter must be his refuge at last. Sometimes, seeing a man in fear of arresting, they will without warrant of the Creditor give him a call of their Office, often arresting him before they enter their Action: and have ways to prevent a mans injuring them by search in the Offices. Other times for a fee they will send to the party to keep out of the way, having received a fee to that end before. Oftentimes, having arrested, if the Creditor stand not by, they will let the party go for a brace of Angels, or so; telling his adversary that he cannot see eye on him. And though their fee for an Arrest is to be but 1 *s.* yet will they hardly be wrought upon to do their Office under a Crown: and though the Statute say that the arrested shall pay but one Groat, I will not excuse him for an Angel. If a man oppose them, or struggle for an escape, they will both gripe and pinch him, and afterwards clap an Action of *Assault and Battery* on him at their own suit. I could say more of them, but that for fear I must be favourable, being now, as I tell you, a prisoner in the *Kings-Bench*, which may be called, *The Bankrupts Banqueting-house*, where he feasts himself on dishes borrowed from other mens tables; or, *The Prodigals Purgatory*, and *A Pesthouse for decaying Citizens*. Being wearie of this place, wherein are as many maladies and mischiefs as flew out of *Pandora's* box opened by *Epimetheus*; I invented this stratagem: One day I pretended much business abroad, and so got leave to go out with my Keeper, resolving not to return with him. Having been from Tavern to Alehouse, and so to Ta-

Tavern again, pretending the dispatch of much business, I at length told my Keeper, that I would visit a very dear friend of mine, but that I thought it requisite to be trim'd first. He consenting, we went to a Barbers. I sat down in the Chair first; and being dispatcht, I desired the Keeper to sit down too, and I would pay for *sprucifying* his *Phisnomy*. Whilst he was trimming I talkt of one thing or other, to hold him in discourse. At last said the Barber, *Shut your eyes, or else my ball will offend them*. Shutting his eyes, I took an occasion to slip out, planting my self in an house hard by; the Barber not imagining I was a prisoner. The Keeper not hearing me talk, valued not the smart, but opened his eyes; and seeing me not in the shop, rose up; and that so hastily, that he overthrew *Cutbeard*, and the bason on him, running out into the street with the Barbers cloth about him, and *Don Barberoso's Turbant* on his head. The people seeing him thus with the froth about his face, concluded him mad, and as he ran gave him the way. The Barber with his Razor ran after the Keeper, crying, *Stop him, stop him, that I may be revenged on the Rogue*. The other nere minding the Outcry, ran staring up and down as if his wits had lately stole away from him, and he in pursuit of them. Some durst not stop him, others would not, thinking the Barber by his posture intended to have his Testicles for abusing his wife. To conclude, the Barber at last seis'd him, and having recovered his cloaths and made him pay 6 d. for shaving, the Keeper was dismist with a kick or two in the arse; the Barber not suffering him to speak a word in his own defence. Thus freeing my self, I resolv'd to take the Country-air, where I happily met with you. Many other things worthy remembrance did he relate, which now I have forgot. Some while we staid together; but at last his business call'd him one way, and my *Padding Trade* invited me another.

CHAP.

CHAP. LI.

He is laid up in Oxford-*Goal by his Hoſt; he is cheated at Cheſter; and after ſome time is ranſomed thence by ſome of his Comrades, Knights of the* Road, *they paying his Debts.*

OUr Crew having been abroad, we had got a valuable Purchaſe; which after we had divided, I told them, that I would but viſit a friend at *Oxford*, and repair to them again within two or three days. My old Acquaintance being over-joy'd to ſee me, after ſo long abſence, treated me very gallantly, introducing me into the ſociety of the Wits; who would frequently drink too, till they had loſt them. The Company pleaſed me ſo well, that I thought it a ſoleciſm in civility, to be ſober, when they made any appointment for mirth; and they being true *Bacchanalians*, in the uppermoſt Claſſis of *Ariſtippus*'s School, ſcorn'd to be outvy'd by a junior Sophiſter; and therefore, do what I could, they would be drunk before me: they never contended about any argument that tended to ebriety, but ſwallowed them all. I thought they would never have done ſpeaking of Sack; every one endeavoring who ſhould expreſs moſt in its praiſe. One ſaid, *That Diogenes was but a dry fellow*; and the only reaſon he could give for it, was, *That it is ſhrewdly ſuſpected by the Commentators on his Tub, that that wooden-houſe of his was given him by a Beer-brewer, who being an enemy to all good wits and learning,*

gave him this Cask, which formerly had contained that pernicious liquor, Beer, that by the meer ſcent he might deſtroy his underſtanding. But *Bacchus* is ſo witty a Philoſopher, that he never fails, night nor day, to pour forth his inſtructions, till he hath filled his auditors out of meaſure; 'tis he that makes us ſpeak fluently, and utter our minds in abundance: for my part, I am commonly ſo over-joy'd in his company, that I have often feared I ſhould never be my own man again. Said another, It is Sack was the *Promethean* fire, not ſtoln from *Jove*'s Kitchin, but his Wine-cellar, to increaſe the native heat, without which we are but cold clay; but that celeſtial liquor applied even to the dead, will cauſe a revivification: this is it which gave *Ganymede* beauty, and *Febe* youth. Can you think, that ever *Ariſtotle* would have been taken notice of, had he drank Ale or Beer; or, that *Alexander*'s conqueſts had been heard of, had he been ſober? therefore to make his Captains famous to poſterity, he taught them how to muſter Quarts and Pottles, and by accuſtoming them to be dead-drunk, ſhewed them the way to contemn death. All this is true (ſaid another, ſo drunk, that what he ſpake could hardly be underſtood) but pray take my opinion with you too: do not all light things aſcend? what better way is there to underſtand high matters, then a light head? *Copernicus* by the lightneſs of his head, claimed alliance with heaven, and by that firſt found out the motion of the earth; which he could never have done, had not Sack been his inſtructer. Hence grew the Proverb, *In vino veritas*, as if Sack were the only Butt truth

ſhoots

shoots at, the piercing of which causeth the other to be drawn out with it. For my part Gentlemen, said I, my passion was never more stirred then the other day, comming by a red-lettice, unto which I have a natural antipathy: there did I hear a Tapster aver, that *Helicon* was nothing more then an Hogshead of March-beer, and that *Pegasus* was anciently a Dray-horse: and then speaking of *French* wine, in derision, called him frisking *Monsieur*; and the *Spanish*, *Don Rhodomontado*; swearing, that if ever he met with either, he would challenge all the Drawers in the Town to dash him as he would. Then tumbling out two or three small-beer oaths, he wisht that he might never look through his red-lettice Percullice, if he did not verily believe he should see *Monsieur* burn'd with a pox to him, and *Spanish Don* mull'd to death with butter and eggs.

It is a thing beyond my reason,
That we strong Ale for Sack should quit,
Since 'twould have blown us up by treason,
Had not Ale best irr'd our wit:
Then give us Ale, but banish Sack;
That Spanish Don *must have the rack.*

I could do no less for his malepertness, but broach his Hogs-head, which to convince him of his error, ran Terse Claret: I heard afterwards, this accident converted the Infidel. We spun out various discourses of this nature, as long as we could see, and then each man reel'd to his respective lodging. The next morning, walking abroad to finde out some of my last nights asso-

ciates, unfortunately my *Cheſter* Landlord (who having ſome buſineſs to do in *Oxford*, was newly come thither to diſpatch it) eſpy'd me, and without accoſting me (like a ſubtile Sophiſter) watcht me whither I went: being houſed, he preſently fetcht two Officers, and coming out into the ſtreet napt me. I ſent to thoſe friends that had been ſo merry with me ever ſince my coming to that City; but they underſtanding the buſineſs, came not neer me; one pretending indiſpoſition of body; another, that he was not within; a third, that he was about urgent occaſions, which having finiſht, he would wait upon me; but in fine, none came to my relief, ſhewing themſelves right pot-companions, whoſe courteſies it may be, ſhall extend to the payment of a Reckoning, when their friend wants it to diſcharge it himſelf; but diſappear and vaniſh, when their aſſiſtance is implored to draw him out of Priſon. Seeing no remedy, I patiently ſuffered my ſelf to be confined. My adverſary viſiting me, I treated with him about my releaſment, offering him what I had, which was neer upon half; but his reſolution was to have all, or there I muſt lie. Though I could not much condemn him, yet I could not but complain againſt the inconſtancy of Fortune; and ruminating within my minde the miſeries that attend all ſorts of priſons, I judged that of Debt to be the moſt deplorable: and though I wanted liberty, which commonly doth depreſs the minde, yet by the vertue of Canary (which I could not be without) my fancy ſcorned to be fettered, but would in ſpite of fate, uſe her freedom. 'Tis ſome kinde of pleaſure and comfort,

for

for a man ſometimes in adverſity, to deſcant on his own miſerable condition; which becauſe I found experimentally true, I applied my ſelf to my uſual cuſtom, the uſe of my pen, differencing theſe Metropolitan Priſons thus:

To Bedlam *men are ſent bereft of wit;*
When 'tis reſtored, then they are freed from it:
Confin'd to Newgate *long, men can't complain,*
For once a month they're cleer'd from it and pain;
In a ſhort time their Bolts wear off, and then
They may be ſure ne're to come there agen;
Diſcharged thence their fettered ſouls ſhall be,
Only an hour confin'd, and then ſet free.
Bridewel, *no wiſe man yet did e're diſpraiſe thee,*
For thou doſt feed the poor, correct the lazy;
The expiration of a little time,
Forgives offenders, and forgets their Crime.
Hereafter from this Priſon, Heav'n defend me,
Rather to Bedlam, Newgate, Bridewel, *ſend me;*
For there Wit, Work, or Law doth ſet men free,
Nothing but Money here gets liberty.

Having lain here above a week, I ſent away a Letter to my Brethren, informing them of my misfortune, and acquainting them with the ſum I was impriſoned for; which was ſent me by them, and brought by one of our truſty Knights: paying my Debt and Fees, I returned again to them.

CHAP. LII.

He returns to his Brethren the Knights of the Road, *whom he finds with two or three Gentlemen, ſtrangers; he cheats one of them of a very fair and rich Watch.*

MY Companions took little notice of me at my return, which made me think there was ſome deſign in hand; but according to their uſual courſe, fell to drink high: obſerving two or three faces, I tipt a wink to one of my Brethren; being in another room; I asked him, who they were; he replied, Gentlemen that were travelling into the *North*; to which he added, We have been pumping them (ever ſince we did thruſt our ſelves into their company) to know what ſtore of Caſh they had about them; but we find little more then will defray their neceſſary expences on the Road; only, ſaid he, there is one of them hath a very rich Watch: I bid him return to his place, and I would warrant him to have it before he ſtirred. I came in again to the company, not taking the leaſt cognizance of any, but ſhewed much reſpect and civility to them all, as a ſtranger; I purpoſely askt what it was a clock: one of the Gentlemen, and of my friends both, pulled forth their Watches, ſtriving who ſhould firſt give me ſatisfaction to my queſtion; after this, they viewed interchangeably the workmanſhip of one & the other, both praiſing the ſeeming goodneſs of each others Watch. At laſt my friend makes a propoſition: Come, Sir, if you pleaſe we will make

make an exchange upon ſentence and repentance. The ſtranger deſired to underſtand his meaning: Why, Sir, ſaid he, we will commit them both into the hands of any one indifferent perſon, and what difference he ſhall judge there is between them, ſhall be given in money by him whoſe Watch is leaſt worth. It was concluded upon; but they could not agree into whoſe hands to put them. At laſt it was mutually agreed upon between them, that I being a ſtranger to them both, ſhould be the decider: I ſeemingly refuſed it, but they would not hear me alledge any arguments to the contrary; whereupon I went out, and immediately cauſing my horſe to be brought forth, without the leaſt delay I mounted, and away I rid. My Comerades knew where to meet me at the next ſtage. The next morning they found me out, telling me how they all ſtormed to be ſo cheated, to avoid ſuſpition: and now did they all embrace me, promiſing to themſelves great hopes in me from this adventure.

CHAP. LIII.

He puts a notable Trick upon a Phyſician.

NEar adjacent to our general randezvous, I was informed of the habitation of a wealthy Phyſician, who had ſhewed himſelf fortunately expert in divers Cures, where it ſeemed that humane art had not ſufficient power to give a remedy. The fame of his great skill, and of many admirable cures, which to the ſhame of other Phy-

ſicians, he had performed, made him ſo generally beloved and ſought after, that in a ſhort time he purchaſed by his ſanatory induſtry, above 500 l. *per annum*, and ſeldom had leſs by him then a thouſand pound. Thus much I caſually underſtood from one accidentally, ſpeaking of this his rich Neighbour: but that which pleaſed me moſt was, that (as he ſaid) he ſeldom carried leſs then an 100 pieces of gold about him conſtantly, proceeding from a fancy derived from an extream love he bore that Metal. I could not ſleep for contriving a way how I might diſembogue this Urinal of what it contained: ſometimes I way-laid him in his return; but he was ſo well eſteemed of, that he ſeldom returned home without two or three Gentlemen to accompany him. At another time I thought to have pretended ſome diſtemper, and ſo have applied my ſelf to him for Cure; and imagining that he would privately diſcourſe with me about my Malady, that then I would preſent a Piſtol to his breaſt, ſwearing, that ſhould be his immediate and unavoidable Executioner, if he did not without the leaſt noiſe or reſiſtance, deliver ſuch a quantity of Gold; but this way I could not approve of, it being accompanied with ſo much hazard. At laſt I thought of this ſtratagem, which ſafely produced its effect: One day after dinner I rid to his houſe (ſeemingly) in extream haſte, which he might perceive not only by my own affrighted looks, but by my horſe, which was all of a foam; I askt his ſervant, with much quickneſs, whether Mr. Doctor was within; yes, Sir, (ſaid he) if you pleaſe to walk in, I ſhall call him to you. I waited ſome time (for moſt of that pro-

profession must take some state upon them) and then Mr. Doctor came. Sir, (said I) the report of your great experience in your happy Practice hath brought me hither, humbly imploring your assistance, and that instantly, if you have any respect to the preservation of life; the trouble I shall put you to, shall be gratefully recompensed to the utmost of my ability. The Doctor inquired of me, whom it was, and what manner of distemper the person laboured under; I readily told him, it was my Wife, who for some continuance of time, hath been extreamly troubled with the flux of her Belly; the more that is applied to it by us, the more it increaseth; wherefore, our help failing, I beseech you lend us yours, and favour me so far as to ride with me to her. The seeming sincerity of my words prevailed upon him, as they would have done upon the most distrustful. This Doctor (who as I was informed, was accustomed to be induced more by gain, then fair words) gave me this desirable answer: Sir, far be it from me that I should refuse to do my endeavour to any person whatever, much less to a Gentleman of your rank and quality, in that little skill which I have in the knowledge and practise of Physick; if I can effect any thing for the good of the good Gentlewoman your Wife, I will attend you thither with a very good will, which at any time my charge requireth. Without attending any further discourse, his horse was made ready, and so we rid away together. As we rid through a small Wood, leading him the way, I turned my horse about, and clapt a Pistol to his breast, shewing him withal an empty bag: See here, Sir, (said I)

my

my Wife, which hath a long time been troubled with a flux or vomiting, which you pleaſe, the laſt I think more proper; for ſhe no ſooner receives any thing for her (and my) ſuſtenance, but ſhe immediately brings it up again at her mouth. Now Sir, if you do not find out ſome means to mitigate this diſtemper (the cure I ſhall never expect, as knowing it impoſſible) this Piſtol ſhall ſend you to *Æſculapius*, to conſult with him what is moſt fit to be adminiſtred: come, Sir, let me adviſe you, and ſave your ſelf the trouble of ſo long a journey; your gold (an hundred pieces (as I am told) are the conſtant attending Eſquires of your body) I ſay, that is the beſt and only *Recipe* for a remedy. The Doctor perceiving there was no help, in much amazement and fear delivered me what gold he had about him, which was neer upon the ſum expreſt: there was a rich Diamond-Ring on his finger, which I deſired him likewiſe to give me, which ſhould ſerve for a perpetual *memorandum* of his kindneſs to me. I commanded him, as he tendred his life, to ride back again, without ſo much as once looking behinde him; and that if he offered to raiſe the Country, if I was ſure to die that inſtant, I would be the death of him firſt. The Doctor followed my dictations ſo exactly, that I never heard more of him.

CHAP.

CHAP. LIV.

He falls in love with a wealthy Widow, who is poetically inclined; he courts her, and in a short time injoys her, and after that ingratefully leaves her, carrying away what ready money she had.

HAving gained so much money by my own industry and sole procurement, I resolved neither to acquaint my Brethren therewith, nor associate my self any longer with them, being so encouraged by this success, that I concluded I might atchieve gallant things by my self: being belated one night, and some miles from any town, I knockt at an house that stood in my road, imagining it at first a publick house for entertainment; one of the servants coming to the door, I found it no such thing: he demanded my business: Prithee sweetheart (said I) acquaint your Master, that there is a Gentleman requests the civility of a nights lodging: she goes in and informs her Mistress what I said; who came to me with much respect, telling me, She questioned not but I was a Gentleman, and therefore should be welcome to the mean accomodation she was capable of shewing. I rendred her many thanks, and so alighted; strict order was given to the Groom, that he very carefully lookt after my horse: this being done, I was conducted into a very fair room; there did I make my apology in the best Rhetorick I had, for I perceived she was endued with ingenuity, by the quaintness of her expressions; *Ex pede Herculem:* Many things I forged, as that

that the ways being dangerous, I was fearful to adventure any farther, having a great charge upon me. Such was her urbanity, that laying aſide all niceties, ſhe bore me company till it was time to go to bed, entertaining me all this while with what the houſe afforded, which was beyond my expectation. Every glaſs of wine, or bit almoſt, that I committed to my mouth, ſhe uſhered thither with ſome Apothegm or other: the whole ſeries, indeed, of her diſcourſe, was compoſed of nothing but reaſon or wit, which made me admire her; which ſhe eaſily underſtood, I perceived, by her ſmiles, when ſhe obſerved me gaping, as it were, when ſhe ſpoke, as if I would have eaten up her Words. As her ſoul was beautiful, ſparkling with celeſtial ornaments, ſo was the caskanet that contained it very fair, and enricht with Natures chiefeſt gifts: She was very clear skin'd, well bodied, a ſharp piercing eye, a proportionable face, an exceeding ſmall and white hand; and then ſhe liſpt a little, which became her ſo well, that methought it added a grace to the reſt of her internal and external qualifications. Being about ten a clock, ſhe adviſed me to repoſe my ſelf, ſuppoſing I was weary. I condeſcended, though with much regret to leave her ſo ſoon; but good manners would not permit me to do otherwiſe: She conducted me to my Chamber, where bidding me good night, ſhe betook her ſelf to her own Chamber. That night I could hardly ſleep, not ſo much for pure love, as the heat of luſt: next morning, very early, I heard her ſtirring, which made me wonder; but ſhe told me afterwards, that ſhe got up ſo ſoon, fearing I ſhould

have gone away, and she not take her leave of me. About eight in the morning, the Maid brought me up a Sack-posset; and a little after, her Mistress came, courteously saluting me, and enquiring how I slept: I return'd an answer, in as handsom terms I could utter: her eyes plainly discovered to mine, that she had more then a common respect for me. Having left me a while, I arose, and made my self ready for my journey: after several discourses which she had ingaged me in, purposely to delay time, with much gratitude I took my leave, she attending me to the court: my horse being brought out, halted down-right (she had caused him to be prickt in the foot, to the intent I might stay longer.) Not knowing what to say or do, Well, Sir, said she, since the unhappy accident hath fallen out so unexpectedly, make use of my house, & what is in it, till your horse be recover'd of his lameness. This was a proposition that my soul longed for; wherefore I could not but shew much satisfaction in the acceptation of this proffer. We walkt in again, & prosecuted for diversion sake our former discourse, interlining it with some love-touches at a distance, which she would frequently descant on pleasantly. We in this short time became intimately acquainted; which need not be much wondred at, considering the greatness of sympathy between us; so that now the conquest of her appeared not any ways difficult. Having talkt our selves weary, Come, said she in a very familiar manner, I will shew you the product of some idle hours; and with that brought me several Epitaphs, Elegies, Anagrams, Anacrosticks, Epigrams, &c. of her own com-

compoſition, too many here to relate; but for their wit, deſerved to have each line characterized in gold: ſome I would here inſert, were not the radiant luſtre of her conceits ſo great and glorious, that they would abſolutely extinguiſh the dim-lightedneſs of my fancy. Having viewed them, I could not but applaud them, as their due merit; and I was glad I had this happy occaſion to vent my own thoughts, which I tacitly inſinuated in theſe lines, reflecting on her from what I had read.

Siſters thrice three I've read of, and no more,
Till your quick wit compleated half a Score:
Since you are one, let me perſwade you then,
Be kind to me, for they are kind to men.
Deareſt, be like them, they are ſoft and blithe;
Let who will love the nine, give me the tithe.

Theſe lines ſo powerfully wrought upon her, that ſhe could not forbear to tell me, that ſhe was much obliged to me for what I had writ. You cannot Madam, ſaid I, cancel your obligation, till you have made ſome recompence: with what, ſaid ſhe ſmilingly, What will content you? The continuance of your favour Madam, is the utmoſt ambition of my deſires. You have it Sir; neither can I deny any deſerving man a thing ſo inconſiderable: By your favour Madam, love I mean. I never was ſo uncharitable, ſaid ſhe, to be out of love with any. I was glad to hear her reply ſo merrily: for a fort which ſo capitulateth, is half ſurrendred. Since I had broke the ice, I was reſolved to proſecute my deſign; wherefore in plain Engliſh I told her, that I loved her from the firſt interview, ſo ardently, that my conſtancy ſhould

prove

prove the reality of my affection: she desired me to leave that to the test of time; that should she believe me suddenly before she had made tryal, she should not only loose the good estimation she had gained by the prudent and discreet management of her affairs, every one accusing her for too much credulity, but thereby it may be involve her self in a Labyrinth of all manner of troubles. Tryal, said I, you shall have: and knowing the manner of courting a widow, a tryal I gave her, knowing that Parleys operate little on a widow, and there is nothing sooner gains a conquest then a resolute assault. This action made her so firmly mine, that I durst not speak of leaving; which when I did at any time, her Soul was ready to leave its ancient habitation to attend on me. Some two months we spent in all manner of self-pleasing delights, till at last I begun to be tyr'd with her too frequent invitations; the more I endeavoured to satisfie her, the further I was from it. Not only by her, but by others, this experiment I found, that the oftner I treated them, the more eagerly and earnestly they desired it. Being now incapacitated to hold out in this manner longer, I thought it high time to be gone, but not without sufficient recompence for my service. She daily sollicited me to marry her, which I promised her from time to time, waiting an opportunity when I might become master of her treasure. One day in a frolick, and the more to encourage me to make a speedy consummation of our loves by marriage, she shew'd me all her writings which concerned her estate (by which I found her to be so wealthy a fortune, that I often-

tentimes curſt my unhappy ſtars, that they had thus debarr'd me from the complement of ſo great a bliſs.) After this, ſhe ſhews me a trunk wherein was contained her caſh: then taking me about the neck with ſuch fervency of affection, that I thought ſhe would have ſtrangled me, & with the repetition of kiſſes, ſhe ſmiling, askt me, whether theſe things ſatisfied me or not. I told her they did, but they were not to ſtand in competition with her moſt affected ſelf: with that ſhe gave me the keys of that trunk wherein her money was; and in retaliation, I vowed to marry her in four days. In the mean time I ſtudied how I might be gone, but could not contrive a way, ſhe not indureing me to be out of her ſight. In fine, I feigned ſome indiſpoſition of body, and that I would ride two or three miles for the benefit of the freſh air, and return: with much unwillingneſs ſhe conſented. Juſt as I was about to take horſe (having furniſhed my ſelf with as much mony as I could well carry without diſcovery) ſhe wept bitterly (as having I think a prophetick Spirit.) I ask'd her the cauſe of her diſcontent: all bathed in tears, ſhe anſwered me with a deep ſigh, I ſhall never ſee you more: Hard-hearted man! can you thus leave a woman that loves you thus dearly, nay, that dotes on you? I made many proteſtations to the contrary; which were not believed. Seeing that I could not prevail on her belief, I bad her farewel, ſetting ſpurs to my horſe, and was out of ſight in an inſtant. I could not but condemn my ſelf extreamly for this inhumane action: but conſidering that there is no ſlavery greater then that of the ſmock, I ſoothed my

my ſelf up in mine own unworthineſs; paſſing by a little Ale-houſe, I called in, and over a pot of Ale I compoſed theſe enſuing lines, which I ſent to her by a meſſenger I procured in the houſe, directed thus:

Deliver theſe to the fair hands of Mrs. Pulcheria Tickleman, *at her dwelling-houſe, near* Redding.

The Contents were theſe, or to this purpoſe.

Madam,
A Poeteſs you are, and Prophet too,
Thus to divine I'm gone from you
Eternally. 'Tis true: D'ye think that I can eat,
Though ne're ſo choice, always one ſort of meat?
No faith; I'd rather wear a Porters frock,
Then to be ſhrowded in one womans ſmock.
You ſay you are with child; Piſh, don't complain,
'Tis but the product of your fruitful brain:
Y'are only big with fancy, which may prove
A witty Brat, like Pallas *ſprung from* Jove.
And have you then conceiv'd? How can I chuſe
But write Encomiums *on my fertile Muſe?*
Mind not the Father, nor his Brat, for it
Will like the Father live (no doubt) by wit:
Let Pegaſus *be Godfather, the crew*
Of the nine Muſes, Goſſips; ſo adieu.

I deſired no anſwer, therefore ſtayed not till the return of the meſſenger, but rid that night to *Maidenhead.*

CHAP. LV.

He comes up to London, *ſends to a particular friend, whom he could confide in, to come to him, and requeſts him to compound with his Creditors, which he did in a ſhort time; and in a ſhort time after, he attempts the robbing of an houſe, but is taken and clapt up in* Newgate: *The miſeries of an impriſoned eſtate, with the manner of his eſcape out of that Priſon.*

THE next day I rode towards *London*, and about twylight took up my quarters in the Suburbs: the day following, I ſent for a friend whom I could put confidence in, who came immediately upon the reception of my Letter. I communicated to him my intentions, who was very glad to hear of my reſolution; yet I would not acquaint him how ſtrong I was, nor by what means procured: 'twas enough that I gave him commiſſion how far forth he ſhould proceed, and no farther, which was half a Crown *per* pound. He went (after I had given him a liſt of them all) to every one particularly, and treated with them ſo cunningly, and they deſpairing of ever recovering a farthing, condeſcended to his propoſals; whereupon he gets them all to ſubſcribe, and then brings the Paper to me, which I exceedingly well liked of. According to the day appointed, he carried them the Money, which every one received proportionably, each man reſpectively giving me his general releaſe from the beginning of the world: they to whom I had conteſt Judgements, filled according to Law

their

their discharges. But when my Creditors a little while afterward, saw me walk the streets in so splendid a garb, some of them were ready to die with anguish; but that which troubled them most, was my supercilious looks when I met any of them, and my slighting salutations. What I did in this respect was only to have the freedom of walking the streets, without the molestation of chargable arrests. I kept such deboistcompany, that the remaing part of my money grew low, and in a very short time after was all spent. All my drunken Companions failed me, and I having nothing left me but my cloaths, necessity made me to condescend to the enquiry after the kind-natured Gentlewoman my Wife: her neerest relations could not give me any account of her, giving her over for lost. I wandred up and down, imploying all the powers of my wit and invention, in the search of what might conduce to supply my present necessities. While I was thus hammering out some new design on the Anvil of experience, I bethought my self where probably I might find my Wife: First, I went to *Ratcliff* high-way, and made enquiry of *Dammaris*, &c. the Metrapolitan Bawd of those parts, for a Gentlewoman of such a complexion, stature, and age, ('twas but a folly to mention her name, for those that follow that trade change their names as often as they do their places of abode) but that cart-load of flesh could give me no information, neither was it possible for me to have staid to hear it, she so stunk of Strong-waters, stonger then that Cask that never contained any thing else: I went down all along to the Gross, in

my way I ſaw many Whores ſtanding at their doors, giving me invitation; but being poor, they could not afford the charge of *Fucus*, ſo that their faces lookt much like a piece of rumpled Parchment, and by their continual traffick with Seamens Breeches, I could not come near them, they ſmelt ſo ſtrongly of Tarpawlin and ſtinking Cod; yet ſtill no tidings of her I ſought for. From hence I went to *Fleet-yard*, but there they were ſo dawbed or plaiſtred with paint, & botcht with patches, that had I ſeen her there, it was impoſſible for me to have known her. Away I went to *Luteners-lane*, *Sodom*, and *Dog* and *Bitch-yard*; but the Pox, it ſeemed, had not yet fitted her for thoſe places. From hence I went to *Whetſtons-Park*, where I ſaw my Mad-dame ſtanding at the door: her frequent trading, and thoſe many ſhots ſhe had received between wind and water in the ſervice, had ſo altered her countenance, and diſproportioned her body, that I knew not whether this Frigate was Engliſh or Flemiſh built: but at laſt, hailing whence ſhe was, I boarded her, and made her lawful prize: miſtake me not, I rummag'd not in her Hold, fearing ſhe was a Fire-ſhip. The ſight and knowledge of me, made her ſhed ſome Babyloniſh tears, which I took little notice of, knowing them to be either cuſtomary to that Sex, or the effects of a moiſt brain. In we went together, where we had, according to the cuſtom of the houſe, Pint-black-pots of ſmall Ale for two pence, and quarterns of Strong-water half fill'd for ſix pence, with Biskets; which as ſoon as brought, every one broken, though not a bit afterwards eaten. We muſt be ſmoking too, though the Pipe

muſt

must be thrown down carelesly, and often broken as soon as put to the lips: one of the Plyers being gone down to draw some more drink, she begged me to conceal my self for the present, and comply also with the cheating customs of the house, and she would willingly pay all. I had hardly smoakt two whiffs more, but that a fellow came where we were, swearing *dam-me*, why do you stay with this fellow, and leave me thus, you unconstant Queen? have I spent my estate on you, and must you now grow weary of me? and with that drew his knife, making a proffer to cut her nose off. I was so amazed at what I heard, and so irritated by passion, that I knew not which of them to be revenged on first. Sir, said I, I have been longer acquainted with her then you, and may justly claim a better title and more priviledge; but as you have affronted me, so I shall require satisfaction instantly, nor referring our difference to be decided by the field, an Umpire that Cowards frequently make choice of: so drawing my knife also, and seizing on his nose, which I intended to have divorc'd from his face, I was prevented, for it dropt off into my hand. This accident so astonisht me, and withal being much affrighted at the sight of his Deaths-head, I durst not meddle with him any further, lest handling any Member, it would have dropt off in the same manner: he made a blow at me, but instead of striking me, I expected when his fist would have flown from his body into my face: he kickt at me, but that leg being up, the other was incapable of supporting his body, and so he fell down. The old Bawd hearing this disturbance, ran to us as fast as the vast

bulk of her body would give her leave, whoſe pace was not much ſwifter then a ſnail in his full carreer, who having faſted too long, by the conſtant repercuſſion of the Sun-beams on him in a miſling morning, forrageth a garden for pillage. From the place whence ſhe ſtarted, to that where we ſcuffled, was about ſix yards diſtance; and from the time of her ſetting forward, to the time ſhe came to us (not to belye the woman) was about half an hour, and then too, out of breath, for the haſte ſhe made. Sirrah, ſirrah, ſaid ſhe, come you hither to breed quarrels, and abuſe civil Gentlemen, and it may be build a ſconce too? get you out of my houſe, you Raſcal, or I'll ſcald you out. By this time the Pimp came to their aſſiſtance, and ſo they all conjoyned to ſhove this poor fellow out of doors: and notwithſtanding he had for two or three years frequented the houſe, yet they neither pitied nor relieved him as a maimed ſouldier, the marks whereof were a ſufficient teſtimony, beſides the loſs of a Member or two. Having diſcharged my reckoning, my Wife appointed me a place where I ſhould meet her. Having now conveniency and privacy of diſcourſe, we wav'd every thing that tended not to my preſent deſign, which was the contrivance of ſome way to live. At laſt we reſolved to take an houſe and live together; I thought it was as good to be Pimp to my own Wife, by which means the ma'or part of the gain would be mine, as Pimp to another for 12 pence a day and ſpunging. What we had determined, we ſoon put in execution: what money ſhe had was laid out in utenſils belonging to our Trade, as for bedding, linnen, chairs and ſtools,

&c.

&c. The Tally-man or Broker, who sells his goods to be paid by 12 *d.* a pound *per* week, the truth of it is, we found of him, but more especially his servants excellent customers; for they would for a private favour, cut off a score, sometimes two or three from the Tally. Our stock being but small, my Wife was forced to be both Bawd and Whore; but our trade increasing, she goes frequently to the Carriers, where at last she had pickt up a couple of very well-featured Country-girls, and brings them home, entertaining them as servants; but shewing as much kindness in them, as if they had been our nearest kindred, purposely to induce them to stay: The Whore, my Wife, intended to have sold their Maiden-heads at a dear rate; but in truth, I ever lov'd such things too well to put them to sale, having them in my possession. To be sure thereof, I gathered my Rose-buds the first night, left the infectious and contagious breath of some one *Suburbicarian* should blast them: in four days time afterwards, I fitted them for their occupations, leaving the instructive part thereof to my Wife to season them withal. I never saw two young Jades understand their trade sooner in my life; for in a Months time they could Cant indifferently, Wheedle most cunningly, Lye confoundedly, Swear desperately, pick a Pocket dexteriously, Dissemble undiscernably, drink and smoak everlastingly, Whore insatiately, and brazen out all their actions impudently. Now did I begin to renew my acquaintance with the Tribe of Rogues, with whom I grew so intimate, that I was seldom out of their company, either at home or abroad. To relate all the tricks & rogueries we

committed in one half year, were an half years work: therefore to be ſhort, we were grown ſo notorious, and ſo generally taken notice of, that at laſt my Wife, and her two Maids of diſhonour, were apprehended by the Marſhals men, and carried to *Bridewel*; I my ſelf narrowly eſcaping by flight: The next day I boldly went to viſit them; methought their beating of hemp became them excellent well; and in troth I'll ſay this for them, there hath not been ſeen in that place a more ſerviceable ſtrong-dockt Crew for many years. Looking very earneſtly upon that Hemp my Wife was beating, a deep fit of Melancholy ſeized me, proceeding only from my imagination; for I fancied that very Hemp would make that very Rope which ſhould put a period to my life. The time of my viſiting them, fell out on the day of their correction; underſtanding ſo much, I reſolved to ſtay and ſee them well laſht, I hop'd: My Wife being manacled, and the whip ready to encircle her Waſte; Hold, ſaid I, and then directing my ſelf to the Maſters of *Bridewel*; May it pleaſe your Worſhips, this woman now under correction, is the moſt impudent brazen-fac'd Whore in the whole Town; I have known her a long time, ever ſince, and ſome ſmall time before ſhe undid her Husband, a very honeſt man indeed, and had the good report of all his Neighbours; but this confident Slut could not then be content without her Stallion, whom ſhe maintained by what ſhe purloin'd from her Husband, and ſo utterly ruined him: ſince ſhe hath been the deſtruction of ſeveral, ſome in their eſtates, others in their bodily health, and now ſo far from being penitent, that ſhe glories in nothing

nothing more, then in the relation of how many she hath undone here and hereafter: wherefore I beseech your Worships, for my friend's sake, that good honest man, and for the good of her own soul, add one half-dozen stripes to the number intended, and let them be laid home. I had no sooner ended my speech, but I vanisht immediately. Just as I was out of the gate, I met with two of my roguing friends, whom the Devil had sent, I think, to way-lay me: they were going, it seems, to see some of their Doxies, that had that day been committed. Being over-joy'd to meet me so accidentally, they would needs have me go to the Tavern with them: over a glass of wine we consulted about divers matters, no goodness to be sure; the result whereof was, that I should go to such an house, and try if by any means I could get into it unperceived, and abscond my self in order to my opening the door for them about twelve a clock. According to the time nominated I went, and with much facility conveyed my self into a lower room, wherein there was a bed, under which I crept, being confident I might lie there securely, till all the household were retired to take their rest. After I had lain about some two hours on the ground, there came into this room a servant; I peept out, and by the light of his candle, saw that which I thought would have distracted me with fear; it was the laying the cloth, by which I understood, the Master of the house intended to sup there: suddenly after, meat was brought in and served to the Table; then came five or six persons, who passing divers complements (all which needless ceremonies at that time, I wisht with

with their inventers were ſtark naked upon the top of the Snowy Alps) every one took ſeats. Had not there been at that time ſome ſmall prating children running up and down, and making a noiſe, the affright their appearance had put me in, would have betrayed me; for my knees knockt ſo hard one againſt the other, that they made a noiſe like a Mill-clack, or the ſtriking of two marrow-bones together: for my life I could not prevent the Palſie from ſeizing every limb of me. My cruel fates had ſo ordered it, that there was a ſmall Dog in the room, and a Cat, both dearly beloved by their Miſtreſs; who would be continually flinging down ſomething other, which they continually quarrelled about, as jealous and envious upon the diſtribution of their Miſtreſs favours: at length ſhe threw down a ſmall bit; the Cat being ſomewhat a more nimble ſervitor, and diligent waiter than the Dog, took it, & ran with it underneath the Bed; the Dog ran after the Cat ſnarling, endeavouring to affright her, that ſhe might forſake the purchaſe: The Dog approaching near, and too much intrenching upon her right, ſhe puts him in minde of his duty, by one ſcratch with her Claw, and chaſtiſeth him for his raſhneſs with two or three more: this ſo angred him, that he made a furious aſſault upon Puſs, who defended her ſelf as well as ſhe could; but at length they cloſed and grappling each other, they made a moſt hideous noiſe. The ſpot in which they fought this combat, was underneath the Bed upon my buttocks: The ſervant that attended being over-haſty to quell the noiſe, by parting the fray, ſnatched up the fire-ſhovel, and throws

it

it underneath the Bed; had it hit my nose with the edge, as it did my breech with the handle, I should have had it pared off even with my face. The Cat instantly provides for her safety by flight, but the Dog still remained behind grumbling, and now and then barking with such eagerness, that he became very offensive to the whole company. Wherefore the servant was commanded to drag him forth, which he he did, beating him, and throwing him out of doors: in the mean time I was left in such a condition, as if I had been breathing my last. As soon as the door was open'd, the Dog came in underneath the Bed with more fury than before: this second alarm did my business (or as they vulgarly say, made me do my business) for running fiercely on me, he had bit me by the nose, but that I snatch't away my head from him: but not observing the Bed-post behind, I thought I had dashed my brains out against it; fear also having bereft me of my retentive faculty, I did let flie at one and the same time, which made so strange a noise together, that they all rose from the table to see what was the matter: their noses quickly informed them of some part, for the room was presently strongly scented; looking underneath the bed, they could see poor *Jain Perus*, giving up the Ghost (as dying persons usually evacute their ordure before their departure) they pulling me forth, and quickly revived me, they roughly handled me, and then beat me, till I was one dead again. Being taken in the present offence, I could expect no other but to be subject to the rigour of their vengeance; I could make no plea sufficient to stay their fury, or satisfie their revenge:

venge: having fetcht a Conſtable, I was carried before a Juſtice of Peace, who with little examination cauſed my *Mittimus* to be drawn, and ſo I was ſent to *Newgate*. I was no ſooner within, and under lock and key, but fetters confined my legs from ſtragling, and bracelets were clapt upon my arms. The Rogues came all flocking about me for their Garniſh, which I gave them: ſome of the gentiler ſort added more to it, ſo that we had abundance of drink. But never did I hear ſo confuſed a din of *Dam-me* and *Sink-me*: others ſinging ſo loud (*alias* roaring) that I thought my ſelf in *Hell*, and that theſe were damned ſouls that roared through extreamity of torments. I thought none had been ſo wicked as my ſelf, till I came among theſe *Hell-hounds*. Not a word came from any of their mouths, but what was ſeconded with an Oath, curſing their bad Stars, and Blaſpheming. The Miſery of this or any other priſon is ſufficiently repreſented, if by nothing elſe then want of liberty, that rich inheritance of living ſouls: as it is the greateſt of injoyments, next that imperial Gem of health, ſo the want thereof next to ſickneſs muſt needs be of all other the moſt bitter. Since then to be confined to the confines of the Goal, is to be in part unman'd, entomb'd alive, what and how great is that wretchedneſs that is occaſioned not only by a want of liberty, but by a continual dread of ſhameful death! The terror of this place full of torture is ſo exaſperated by the imagination of a noble mind, that Hell it ſelf cannot contain more exquiſite woes and pains, a continuance whereof were ſufficient to puniſh all offences, if the Law diſpenced with that debt due to Juſtice, the life of the offender. Your companions are

none

none but licentious wretches, ſouls which daily ſurround you with their loathſome perſons over-ſpread with ſcabs and lice. Here ſighing is our air, our comfort coldneſs, our food deſpair, our muſick rattling of chains, our recreation the deſtruction of vermin; laſtly, our expectation death and damnation. The keeper with the grim aſpect of his ſtern countenance makes us tremble, with fear of a new martyrdom, whilſt the inſulting raskal on the tiptoes of his pride need not skrew his ill-favoured face to a frown, for he knows not how to look otherwiſe; which ſo dejects the ſpirits of we poor impriſoned ſlaves, that the contrition of our looks ſeems to implore his ſmiles, whoſe flinty heart having renounced remorſe, caſts a defiance in our ſad and pitious faces. I might inſiſt much further, but that I am haſtning to get out of the miſerable and ſoul-excruciating priſon. One day after I had exonerated nature, I chanced to view the ſeat, and found that it was no difficult matter to go down the vault by the help of a Rope. A truſty friend coming to ſee me, I told him what I had obſerved, and what I wanted: ſome three days before the Seſſions, he brought me Rope enough to have hanged us all. Having a reſpect unto two more, which I honoured for their admirable good parts, I informed them of what I intended; which preſently we put in execution. Firſt I went down, but I could have wiſhed my ſelf up again; for I was up to the neck, and knew not but I might be deeper, but to my great comfort I found to the contrary: the reſt deſcended after me, with the like good ſucceſs. Having gotten us to an houſe, in which we could put confidence, we quickly freed our ſelves from our Iron tackle.

CHAP.

CHAP. LVI.

He and his two Comrades (which he had delivered) diſguiſe themſelves, and having been old experienced Gameſters, they taught him all the tricks on Cards, by which they uſually cheated their Cullies or Mouths, and alſo how to nap, palm, or top a Dye; With all things thereunto belonging.

WE had places enough to ſend to for change of apparel, as rich as we pleaſed, or as beggerly again on the contrary, according as our deſign required. Having layen in *Lavender* about a fortnight in this houſe, not only to ſweeten us, but that the rumour of our eſcape, and ſearch for us might be over, we got our ſelves change of habits: Then did we all conſult with our Looking-glaſſes for the change of our faces, not ſuffering our own judgements to paſs, without the approbation of the reſt. In the firſt place I got me a coal-black Perriwig (my own hair being flaxen) and a ſmall falſe beard ſuitable, with whiskers in the *Spaniſh* faſhion: It was no great trouble to black my eye-brows every morning; then clapping a patch on my left eye, ſtealing out of the room, while my Companions were buſied about the ſame thing, not minding me, and coming in again preſently, my appearance did put them all into a very ſtrange confuſion. I changed my voice, and asked them what they were doing; and ſpeaking to them in a tone they were not acquainted with, their chops mov'd inceſſantly, but the Devil a word

word I could understand; they had got a palsie in their jaws by their sudden surprizal: To have observed the several Mankey-faces, and Baboon-postures, could not but extract laughter from the severest Cynick. Why don't you answer me, and that quickly, ye sneaking dumb Rascals? Looking most pitiously one upon the other, expecting who should speak first, at last said one, We mean no harm, we are only preparing some things for a Mask, which shortly will be presented to the Citizens, and we are persons therein concerned. I could not hold longer, but burst forth into an excessive laughter, by which they understood their mistake, not without shame enough to think that the apprehension of danger so slightly grounded, should so terrifie them, being struck dumb, and almost dead with a pannick fear. To be brief, we very well liked the manner of our Metamorphosis; and having borrowed some money as the necessary tools of our intended Trade, we adventured abroad. The first Mouth we pickt up was in the *Long-walk* by *Christ-Church*, upon the account of a wager: there came towards us a young man, who by his garb seemed to be a Merchants man (he afterwards proved so, and his Cashеer) I stept to him, and said, Sir, if it may not be too troublesome to you, I beseech you resolve me one question: This Gentleman hath laid an Angel with me, and referr'd the decision thereof to the next that came this way, whether this next adjacent Hospital be S. *Thomas*'s, or S. *Bartholomew*'s. Said the yong man, I can assure you it is S. *Bartholomews*. Why then friend (said I) you have lost. Sir, will you be pleased (if it may not be any great hindrance

to

to your preſent affairs) accompany us to the next Tavern, and participate of the loſings? for I ſcorn to pocket it. He condeſcended, and ſo we went together: we diſcovered not any thing till the ſixth pint, and then my friend, as by chance found a pair of Cards in a corner of the window, which he himſelf had layed there before. Here is a pair of Cards (ſaid he) come, to paſs away the time, let us play for a pint or ſo; ſo I really took up my friend, *Putt* was the game; I won of him two or three pints, and ever and anon I would drink to the ſtranger, ſo that now he began to be warm'd, and ſeemed to take delight in our play, looking over my hand, and ſometimes prompting me to ſee him when he did *put* to me. At laſt my friend played the High Game, as the term of Art renders it; that is, he gave me two Trays and an Ace, and reſerved for himſelf two Trays and a Duce. My Antagoniſt puts to me: I pretended I knew not what to do, ſhewed my game to the ſtranger that looked over my ſhoulder: he jogs me on the Elbow; I ſtill delayed: come Sir (ſaid my opponent) what will you do? I will hold you five pound on theſe very Cards in my hand. I receiv'd the ſecond jog: will you go my halfs Sir, ſaid I? He anſwered me, that he would. But alaſs, we loſt: it could be no otherwiſe. This ſo animated the ſtranger, that he perſwaded me to play again, and that he would go the moyety of every ſtake. Sometimes 'twas ſo ordered that I won, but in fine, I loſt forty pound, my Cully being half. He would now give over, being much perplex'd that he ſhould thus loſe his Maſters money: but that he might forget the condition he was in, we drank round

round ſome half a dozen healths: So that now I thought it high time to provoke him again to let down his milk by ſome new trick or ſtratagem.

Now did we fall to the *Preaching of the Parſon*, a trick on the Cards, which hath deceived the moſt curious eye, and the warieſt of men; with which we gained from our young Merchant, the major part of his money.

Laſtly, to the intent we might without any further delays give him an acquittance for the reſt of his money, we drew out ſome other implements, *viz.* Dice fixt for our purpoſe, as *High-fullums*, which ſeldom run any other chance then four, five, and ſix; *Low-fullums*, which run one, two, and three, &c.

By theſe means we ſent him home pennileſs and heartleſs, whileſt we drank healths to the confuſion of ſorrow.

CHAP. LVII.

From hence he goes, by the direction of his Comrades, to a new-faſhion Bawdy-houſe; *he deſcribes it, and relates his own ſucceſs.*

UPon the diviſion we found each mans ſhare to amount to 40 *l.* apiece. Being overjoy'd at our firſt good ſucceſs, we reſolv'd to return thanks for our good fortunes in ſome private Meeting-houſe, where we might have a Siſter to aſſiſt in the carrying on the work of the day. The Devil in all Societies never wants his Factor, or one to ſollicit his buſineſs: For, I had no ſooner intimated my deſires, but preſently one of my Rope-brokers gave me information of a place fit for that purpoſe, and that the like was not any where to be found. Being prickt on with the deſire of novelty, and to underſtand the curioſities therein, I went according to my directions ſolely; for company in ſuch deſigns commonly fruſtrates expectations. They adviſed me when I came to the door, to pretend I came to enquire out lodgings: At the firſt, I verily thought my ſelf abuſed by theſe Rogues, or miſtaken in the houſe, when I ſaw a Porter ſtanding at the door with his tipt-ſtaff: To undeceive my ſelf, I confidently, yet civilly askt him, whether there were any Lodgings to be let there? Yes Sir, (ſaid he) which you may view if you will give your ſelf the trouble of walking in. I had no ſooner entred the door, but I was met by a grave Matron, who readily underſtood

ſtood (as I conceived) my approach by her ſentinels above in the windows. Madam (ſaid I) I am informed, that here are lodgings to be let. There is ſo, Sir, (ſaid ſhe) and with that conducted me into her Parlor (which was gallantly furniſhed) there to take a ſtricter view of me, as to my perſon, but more eſpecially my garb, by which ſhe might partly judge how well lined my pockets were. After the reſolution of ſome trivial queſtions, for diſcourſe ſake, ſhe was ſo well ſatisfied in me, that ſhe ſhewed me the way up one pair of ſtairs, into a very large and fair Dining-room hung with rich Tapiſtry, and adorned round with excellent Pictures, the Effigies of divers Ladies (as I took them to be) renowned and celebrated in all ages, for the faireſt and moſt beautiful of that Sex. A ſervant brought us up, immediately after our entry into that room, a bottle of Sack, without any order given, as I could perceive; out of which the old Gentlewoman drank to me, expreſſing my welcome. For want of other diſcourſe (as *I* thought) becauſe we were both ſilent a while, for *I* was contemplating her face, in which *I* could then ſee ſtill the goodly ruines of a beautiful and handſome countenance; Sir, ſaid ſhe, as you are a Gentleman, you may have ſome knowledge in that noble Art of Limning, ſince for its excellency it is in theſe our days (and hath been in moſt ages) much ſtudied by the Gentry of this Nation; wherefore, your judgement, Sir, which of all theſe Pictures is the beſt drawn, or according to the rules of Phyſiognomy, hath the beſt features? Madam, ſaid *I*, *I* ſhall freely give you my judgement; which is, This, in my opinion,

(pointing at one) for ſhe hath a full large front, her archt eye-brows are thick and black, without any ſtragling hairs; her eyes are of the ſame colour, and by their intuitive faculty ſeem to penetrate that which they look on; paſſing her cheeks, which carry in them an excellent air, and her noſe, which is neither too long nor too ſhort, view her lips, whoſe plumpneſs and redneſs reſemble a double Cherry; and then for the dimples in her cheeks and chin, I could make them the ſubject of an whole days diſcourſe: what might be ſaid more of this repreſentation *I* ſhall wave, wiſhing my ſelf no greater happineſs, then to diſcourſe the reſt with the real ſubſtance, which is not impoſſible, Sir, if you can have but the faith to believe your own eyes; and ſo inſtantly thereupon withdrew her ſelf, leaving me amazed at what *I* had already ſeen, my heart the mean time beating an alarm to my paſſions, to be all in readineſs at the approach of this Celeſtial Creature. Hearing a ruſhing of Silks, *I* drew my eyes off the Picture, and looking towards the door, there *I* ſaw enter an Angel; for *I* could not believe there could be ſo much perfection in any one mortal: with profound reverence *I* ſtood at a diſtance, admiring, or rather adoring her perſon, till ſhe ſmilingly and familiarly deſired me to ſit down. Being come to my ſelf, *I* could talk to her; and in half an hour, confidence had repoſſeſt her ancient ſeat in me. *It* will not only take up too much time, but alſo offend the ears of the modeſt Reader, here to inſert what diſcourſes we had; therefore *I* wave them, and come to the concluſion. Sir, ſaid ſhe, *I* queſtion not but that you are acquainted

with

with the customs of the House. *I* protested to her, *I* was altogether ignorant. Why, you know that you may call for what Wine you please, not exceeding four Bottles; and if you please to eat, you shall have some choice bit suitable to the season, &c. if you stay not all night, your expence shall be but forty shillings, and you shall have to boor, the enjoyment of a Mistress besides: but if you stay all night, then thus must you do (and with that drew forth ten pieces of Gold) whether you fancy me or any else, that matters not, you must deposit before you go to bed ten pound, laying it underneath your own head, and for every kiss, &c. take a piece back again, and if you draw in this manner all your own stake, you may next day be dismist with a great deal of applause, without expending a penny, but what you shall be pleased to distribute voluntarily among the servants. *I* was stark mad to be at it, and so impatient, that *I* presently told out ten pieces. Telling my money the next morning, *I* found *I* had eight pound of my ten, but *I* deserved to have my money trebled: however, for the present, *I* thought forty shillings was never better spent, nor husbanded with so much recreation and delight. By her *I* understood what manner of cattel they were that frequented that house, though prostitutes and free-booters, yet such as scorned a piece of Country-dirt: some whereof, were persons of no mean quality, which came thither to satisfie (what was impossible to do) their insatiate lusts, and therefore enacted that Law or Custom of depositing ten pieces, meerly to incite such who were confident of themselves to make trial of

their skill for the lucre of gain; and to the intent that it might not be diſcovered, either by their Husbands, or ſuch relations or friends that had received cauſes of jealouſie, they had their peeping-holes, where they might plainly and fully ſee ſuch who came upon the like accounts. *If* the Gentleman was unknown to that Gentlewoman whoſe Picture he elected to bear him company that night, ſhe with much freedom would appear, and tender her ſelf as the ſubject of his pleaſure; otherwiſe abſcond her ſelf. *If* ſo, and the Gentleman preſs hard for a ſight of her the Picture repreſented, why then Madam Bawd finds ſome excuſe or other, as that Picture ſhe bought caſually at ſecond-hand as ſhe paſt through *Long-lane*, or that it was the gift of ſome friend of hers: with many other fictions, meerly to make him deſiſt from the purſuance of his deſires. Being very much pleaſed in the ſatisfaction of my fancy, I took my leave, not without ſome acknowledgement thereof, in theſe conſequent lines.

What is a Bawdy-houſe? *I fain would know:*
It is a thing appears ſo by the ſhow.
Is that a Brothel, *or an houſe of State,*
Where Tip-ſtaff Porters do attend the gate?
This was a ſtately houſe, and yet was ſuch;
In ſtately houſes Ladies take a touch.
It muſt be ſo, th' have little elſe to do,
Then ſtudy how to anſwer thoſe that woo.
Such pamper'd fleſh muſt yield, and few gain-ſays
Their own luſts motions, but with formal nays;
Rather then want that ſatisfaction, moſt
Stick not to purchaſe it, though at the coſt

Of

Of health and wealth; delighting thus in ſence,
They never think too much the recompence.
Why ſhould they then fond ſouls rail at an Whore,
Since they themſelves are on that very ſcore?
And damn all Brothels *too to Hell; but ſtay*
What houſe is not a Brothel-houſe, *I pray?*
Many I've ſeen, with this none can compare;
A new Exchange, where Ladies ſell their Ware
To none; they ſcorn thereon to ſet a price,
But leave it ſolely to the Chapmans choice:
Here by a female Council 'twas judg'd fit,
He that reaps pleaſure here, muſt pay for it;
Not with his purſe, ſo much as brawny back,
Solely affecting ſuch who holds them tack:
And to provoke men on, no want of Wine;
Nay, all delights do here in one combine
To raiſe mens fancy, that he may do o're
That thing he did but even then before.
Her roſie dimpled cheeks, vermilion lips,
Did bluſh to ſee her ivory thighs and hips:
Her round ſoft belly ſwell'd with pride, for lo!
Like a ſmall Hill 'twas overſpread with ſnow:
Let but a warm hand touch it, and it will
Its moiſture into pearly drops diſtil.
We kiſt and parted, I ſigh'd, ſhe did ſob;
She for her luſty Lad, *I for my* Mob.

CHAP. LVIII.

He finds out his two Comerades (the Gameſters *)and after ſome conſultation had, they reſolved to reaſſume their* quondam *trade of* Padding; *are taken and committed to* Newgate.

FRom this houſe of pleaſure, (where I muſt ingeniouſly confeſs I never received more for ſo little expence) I went in ſearch of my two Gameſters, whom caſually I met: The next Tavern was our Council-chamber, where Wine was the dictator. We there unanimouſly concluded, it was a thing beneath us to pick up here and there Crowns or Angels, but reſolved on Have at all, knowing that a five hours adventure might make us poſſeſſors of 500*l.* With this reſolution we went and bought us horſes, with all things requiſite for our intended expedition: being all ready and well prepared, we took our leaves of *London* for a while; we had not rid above fifteen miles, but we baited: the Hoſtler knowing me, and what deſigns I had formerly been upon, and imagining I was ſteering the ſame courſe, whiſpered me in the ear, that he had a deſire to ſpeak with me inſtantly: taking my opportunity, under the pretence of looking to my horſe, he informed me, that there were three within drinking, that on the next morning would travel ſuch a Road, and that they had a great charge with them. I thankt him, bidding him come to my chamber at night, where I would diſcourſe farther with him. Then

he

he gave me a ſummary account of all; and after a ſmart drinking-bout, with promiſes to him of reward if we proſpered, we betook our ſelves to our reſt: in the morning very early we called for our horſes, and rid in that very Road through which thoſe three Travellers were to paſs, where we planted our ſelves very conveniently: about three hours after, we could diſcern them at a diſtance; by that time we had made our ſelves ready, they were at hand: juſt at the bottom of a ſmall hill we bid them ſtand; they askt us to what intent: We told them, that we were younger Brothers, and wanted mony, and therefore muſt borrow ſome of them. With that, they all in an inſtant drew their ſwords; being not unprovided with Pocket-piſtols, we fired at them, and they again at us: we were all at level-coyl, and very equally matcht; the ſecond ſhot killed my horſe, and a fourth bereaved my Conſort of life; the third Rogue ran away: being in a labyrinth of perplexity, I thought it the beſt way to ſel my life at as dear a rate as I could (knowing very well, that if I were taken I ſhould be hanged.) I fought with my ſword as long as I could ſtand upon my legs, wounding both them and their horſes; but at laſt one unhappily ran me through the ſword-hand, and thereupon I was diſarmed. I was carried by them before the next Juſtice of Peace, whom they enquired out, and by a *Mittimus* was committed. I could not now expect any thing but death: but the next news I heard was, that I muſt be removed to *Newgate*, there being other things to be alleadged to my charge. I was mounted again, in order to my removal, but very ill

hors'd

hors'd, being bound thereunto and pinnion'd. My greateſt grief (when I came into *London*-ſtreets) was to hear the various diſcants of the good women on me; ſome ſaying, What a pity it is ſuch an handſome young man ſhould come to the gallows ſo ſoon? Others judged I had deſerved it, otherwiſe I ſhould not have rid to Town in that poſture pinnion'd, and ſo attended with a guard. As ſoon as the Keeper ſaw me, leaping for joy, O Sir, are you come again? we will take care that you ſhall not be any more annoyed with ſmells proceeding from the Vault; and ſo without more ado, laid as much iron on me, as there is in ſome Smiths ſhops, and confined me cloſe Priſoner to the Dungeon.

Which made me curſe thoſe acts the Fates have done,
To cauſe a ſetting ere a riſing Sun:
But ſince my doom is now decreed by Fate,
I muſt indur't, repentance is too late.

CHAP.

CHAP. LIX.

He much condemns the follies of his past actions, and in token of his unfeigned repentance, gives some general instructions to his Country-men, first how to know Padders on the Road, *by infallible signs; with other remarques worthy the observation of any Traveller, laid down in some consequent Chapters.*

BEing in this terrestrial Hell, (where darkness, horror and despair surrounded me) my conscience started out of her dead sleep, and presently demanded of me a severe account of what I had done. My guilt was such, I had not a word to speak for my self, but wished my production (as my actions were) inhumane. What did not then the apprehension of an approaching and unavoidable death, suggest to my thoughts! to have only dyed (though with the most exquisite, terrifying, and soul-excruciating tortures) was not a thing the spirit of man should shriuk at; but the consideration of an eternal punishment hereafter, justly inflicted on such who have offended an infinite God, absolutely distracted me: So that methoughts, I already heard the howls and hollow grones of damned Souls, which add to the weight of their everlasting misery. Having somewhat appeased my enraged conscience, by a faithful promise and constant resolution to lead a new life, if I should escape the danger of the Law, I determined with my self, to shew the first Fruits of

of my reformation, by publiſhing ſomething to the world, that might ſerve as a guide for Travellers, how they might paſs in ſafety on their way. To that purpoſe I acquainted my Keeper with my good intentions; but that being no particular profit to him, he valued not the publick, and therefore rejected my good motion, till I greas'd his fiſt, and then I had the accommodation of a Candle, Pen, Ink and Paper, &c. The uncertainty of their attire, various diſeaſes, non-conſtancy of reſidence, & changeable names, makes me incapable to do what I would: Therefore I will do what *I* can (according to my ſmall experience, occaſioned by my no long continuance among them.) Riding on the Road (if you have company) it may be two or three ſhall overtake you, and ſeem to be much afraid of you: they will pretend to be even now ſet upon by half a dozen ſtout fellows, but that they did beat the Rogues, forcing them to fly for ſafety: and this fiction they uſe to ſeal with basket-hilt-oaths: thus by your anſwers they will finde whether you dare fight; if not, they will wait an opportunity to act their roguery on you; which having done, as a reward for what unwillingly you have left them, they will pretend to give you a word ſhall protect you better than your ſword, from any injury ſhall be done you upon the like account: but this is nothing elſe than a meer cheat, and no ſecuring charm; for we valued not words, when our wants were in purſuit of Monies. Not but that we uſed ſome formal words among our ſelves, when ready to ſeize

seize a prize; and observing other company, either before or behind, to desist a while, by which we knew what we had to do, and the ignorant Travellers suspected no wrong.

CHAP. LX.

What is to be taken heed unto, before the Traveller begins his Journey.

MOst respected Country-men, and more especially you, who frequently pass the Road, the most part of my notorious wicked life having been consumed in all manner of cheats and debauchery, and that in part of late maintained by robbing: seeing now the wretchedness of that course of life, and being sensible of the injury *I* have done my Country, *I* looked upon my self as bound to satisfie the debt *I* owe to you, to the uttermost of my power, which reacheth to an act not more satisfactory, than good advice how to avoid those dangers which too many of late days have fallen into, since Dammee Plumes of Feathers came in fashion. First then, if you carry a charge about you, make it not known to any, and conceal the time of your departure in your own breast; for it is a custom no less common than indiscreet and foolish, among some sort of persons, to blaze abroad among their reputed friends, the time of their intended journey, and vainglorioully make them acquainted with what considerable sums they should carry with them; by which means the

the Son hath oftentimes betrayed the Father, and one friend another, by informing or complotting with some of the Padding society; the discoverer sharing (for giving notice of the prize) one quarter or more of the gain he betrays, when but for this foolish humour they had not been way-lay'd. Again, have a special care, both of the Hostler, Chamberlain and Host himself: the two first the Thief is sure to bribe; and the last, in expectation of a share with them (as it is so ordered) or in hopes that the major part of what they get shall be profusely spent in his house, gives them items where the booty lies. Especially be sure on the road to associate with none but such as you finde inclined rather to leave your company then keep it; for they are very suspicious persons, and oftentimes prove dangerous, that press into your society, and are very inquisitive to know whither you intend, spinning out the time with many impertinent questions. But if you would know whether the strangers intentions be honestly inclined, take occasion to make some stay; observe you in the mean time their motion: for if they make an halt, or alight, so that you may overtake them, follow at a distance; but if their pace be so slow that you needs must overtake them, look about you, and provide for your safety, for there is no surer symptom of an Highway-man than such purposed delays. The other usual marks of such Maths be these; they commonly throw a great Leaguer-cloak over their shouldiers, covering their face, or else they have visibly disguised their faces in some manner or other. Now of late they finde very useful a Vizard in every respect (but

for

for the largeneſs) like the *a-la-mode* Vizard-masks ſo much worn by Gentlewomen, who endeavour to conceal the ſhame of their wanton actions by abſconding their faces. If you meet with any who have none of theſe things, as ſoon as they come ſomewhat near you, fix your eye full in their face: if they turn their heads from you, keep your diſtance, and ride from them with what expedition you can; but being ſurprized by any you know, be very careful that you diſcover it not to them; for theſe Deſperado's never think themſelves ſecure, till they have prevented your giving intelligence, by cutting aſunder the thread of your life. Obſerve whether their beards and hair of their head agree in a colour, and are not counterfeit: and be ſure to beware of him that rides in a Mountier-cap, and of ſuch as whiſper oft; or of any one ſingle perſon that intrudes into your company; for that is one way they have to enſnare the Traveller: he will tell you a great many merry and facetious ſtories, meerly to ingratitate himſelf with you; which having obtained, he ſhews himſelf more than ordinary civil, and ſo fearful of any thing that may prejudice his new acquaintance, that he no ſooner eſpies two riding toward them, but he apparently trembles, and will preſently queſtion his new friends, what charge they have about them: if little, the beſt way were to yeild to theſe approaching perſons, if Thieves, rather than hazard a life; but if it be any thing conſiderable, he will preſently vow to be true to them, and rather than they ſhould come to any danger or loſs, he will fight with them as long as he hath breath. Theſe ſo cauſleſly ſuſpected, were perhaps down-

righ

right honeſt fellows: but before they have travelled five miles further, 'tis ten to one but they overtake two or three more, one it may be riding aſide with twiſts of Hay inſtead of Boots, it may be with a Fork, Bill, or Goad in his hand, like a Country-Boor. It may be your newly-entertained treacherous Friend will tell you that he will make good ſport with this Country-Bumpkin, and ſo to that purpoſe ask him ſome fooliſh impertinent queſtion, which the other ſhall anſwer as ridiculouſly; ſo ſpinning out the time till a convenient place and a fit opportunity ſerve; then ſhall this pretended friend ſeize one of you himſelf, and my Hedge-creeper turn Hector, and lay hold on another: and now will it be in vain for you to ſtrive, for nothing but money will ranſom you out of their hands.

CHAP. LXI.

Inſtructions in what manner, at what time, and what Road is moſt ſafe to ride.

THere are ſo many ways to rob the innocent, that it behoveth every man to be very circumſpect, how, when, and where he rides. If you have a quantity of money about you, chuſe rather to ride by night then day; for by this means you are freed from any Horſeman or Cutter whatever. But this courſe cannot ſeal your protection from baſe ſheep-ſtealing penny-Rogues, the baſeneſs and lowneſs of whoſe ſpirits wil ſtoop for a Noble, though they hang for their pains; therefore take heed

heed of their long poles, and that they do not ſuddenly ſtart out and lay hold on your bridle. As for the nobler ſort of Rogues, this they believe as an undeniable Maxime, that none will ride by night that are worth the robbing. Beſides, they are oblig'd to take their Inn betimes, leſt through miſtruſt they ſhould be apprehended: Moreover, they hardly dare adventure in the dark, becauſe they cannot diſcern what dangerous defences the aſſailed have, as Piſtols, or other private weapons in readineſs, nor ſee their own advantages: and withal, it will be no difficult matter to convey in the obſcurity of the night, what they have undiſcovered, into ſome ditch. Chuſe to travel in by-roads, for it is a general rule with High-way-men, to keep their ſtation on the greateſt Roads, that of the number that paſs by, they may ſelect ſuch as they think will prove the richeſt booties. Here now as a Corollary, take notice of a fooliſh cuſtom: Some when they ride by any place that commonly ſpeaks danger, they will buſtle up together ſide by ſide, which is the uſual overthrow of ſuch. Wherefore take my counſel here, when ere you ride, in fear eſpecially, ride far aſunder, at leaſt a ſtones throw: by ſo doing none durſt ſet upon you, fearing leſt this ſtragling order give ſome leave to eſcape undoubtedly, and ſo raiſe the Country in their purſuit.

CHAP. LXII.

How a man is to behave himſelf if beſet or ſurpriſed.

WHen the Rogue bids you ſtand, look not about as if amazed, or hoping for a reſcue; for this doth but encourage them to the height of reſolution and expedition: but looking ſternly, as if fear were a ſtranger to you, making your brow the throne of rage and fury, draw, and undauntedly tell them, that though you have but little, yet you would willingly ſacrifice your life rather then loſe a penny; and add ten more to it (if you had them) then have your reputation ſtained with cowardiſe. This is the readieſt and moſt certain way to ſave both your money and credit; for they fighting with a guilty conſcience within and without, againſt a Country, Law, and Juſtice, if nobly a man reſiſts (this I know experimentally) the ſtouteſt, and moſt undaunted, and higheſt ſpirit of them all will ſtoop to diſcouragement. Some I have known, that durſt outbrave the roaring Gannon to the mouth, yet their courages have found an alteration, when on this account they have met with a bold and nobly reſolved Antagoniſt: but if by your own negligence, and the malevolency of fortune, the pleaſure of your journey is eclipſed and clouded by a ſudden ſurpriſal, and that you ſee no hopes but that you muſt yield, be not ſo unwiſe to ſtrive when it is too late, but give them the beſt words you can, and

and rack your wits to pleaſe their ear, moſt devoutly wiſhing you had more moneys to ſupply their preſent occaſions; and ſo baniſhing all dejectedneſs from your looks, deliver ſome, and ſo perhaps they will let you paſs without further ſearch. *If* they make a ſecond offer, yield freely to it: then it may be they will ſift you ſoundly; never in that time lay your hand near your money, and ſeeming fearleſs, it will be a means to make their ſuſpition of a greater ſum to vaniſh. This *I* have known my ſelfe, that when *I* have taken ſo much as pleaſed me well, by mens fear *I* have had grounds to think they had more, and ſo made me reſearch; laying my hand but near the place where they had concealed the reſt, ſuddenly would they cry out, that they were undone, when as yet *I* had found nothing; but by this their fooliſh and undiſcreet carriage *I* have found the remainder, which otherwiſe might have been ſecure and ſafe from me.

CHAP. LXII.

Directions, if robbed, how to follow the Thieves; which way to ſet Hue *and* Cry *after them; how to coaſt, and where to find them.*

IF you are robbed, there is no help but to indeavour to ſurprize the Thieves by a ſtrict purſuit: Therefore let no *Remora* or delay deter you from obtaining your wiſh, and ſo ſeize them that ſo lately ſeized you. In the firſt place, ſcowre the next Road, not ſtreight before, but either on the right or left-hand; for they know *Hue* and *Cries* never croſs the paſſages, but go ſtraight along. If in ſo doing you miſs them, then conclude they are ſheltred in ſome Inn which you have paſt, and therefore you muſt ſet ſome careful Spies, with a ſufficient aſſiſtance near at hand, and be confident you will ſee them come that way, without the leaſt apprehenſion of fear, or fear of apprehenſion. But this obſerve, that if they light of any conſiderable ſum, then do they ride that night to their general Rendezvous in *London*, which is too ſure a ſhelter for them: but obſervably take notice, for here is as eminent an example of their ſubtilty, as any ever the Devil enrich'd their knowledge with; For, if you are robbed in the eaſtern quarter, purſue them not in the direct Road to *London* with *Hue* and *Cry*, for by ſome other way they are fled; but haſte to the City, and in *Weſtminſter*, *Holborn*, the *Strand* and *Covent-Garden* ſearch ſpeedily, for there they are. If Northward they light on you, then to *Southwark*,

mark, the *Bankside*, or *Lambeth* they are gone; and when you find any one, seize all with him, for they are all Companions that are together.

CHAP. LXIV.

Cordial advice, and infallible instructions for the Innkeeper, *how to know Thieves from his honest Guests.*

METhinks the many tragical examples of Innkeepers, who have harboured and countenanced Thieves, were sufficient (I should think) to deter those that survive from doing the like; wherefore my advice to them in general is, that their chiefest care be, not to wink at any such life-destroying actions for hope of gain, lest that sweet be imbittered by future trouble and disgrace. That you may know them, observe these Rules: First, they are extraordinary curious about their horses; they will have them as strangely drest, as strangely fed, with Mashes, Bread, Flesh, and mingled provender, and that in an unusual quantitie. If any wonder at the extraordinary feeding of their horses, they will endeavour to palliate their design therein, by telling that their tricks and good abilities deserve it: nay, sometimes they will boast, that their worthy services will soon repay the cost; using the like dark words to that effect, which are palpable grounds for suspition. It is their custom likewise, to ask, Whose horse is that? or, What is the owner thereof standing by? of what function or qualitie? whither he intends to travel? how far, and when? Observe again,

that their Cloak-bags are for the moſt part empty, carrying them only but to make a ſhew. Next, the Chamberlain conducting them to their Chamber, he is preſently diſmiſt; but let him hearken, and if they are High-way men, 'tis ten to one but they fall to ſhare what they have purchaſed that day; and he ſhall ſee every one taking his dividend, as well as hear the money, if he but narrowly pry into the Chamber. This they never defer, leſt he which hath the purſe ſhould cheat the reſt. But above all, for their diſcovery, make this trial; Cauſe one to knock haſtily at the gate, giving him inſtructions in the mean time that attends on them, to obſerve their carriage then, and he ſhall ſee them ſtart and ſtare in each others face with gaſtly looks, being ſtruck with fear and amazement: ſpeak ſo that they may hear you, ſeemingly to ſome or other in the houſe, asking what Officers thoſe are? what is their buſineſs? or whom do they look for? or the like. If they ſeem much frighted, bid them fear not, for none ſhall ſearch where they are, to offer them any injurie; and that they are as ſafe with him, as in a well-fortified Caſtle. By this means you may pry into their private thoughts and actions ſo far, as that you may gather, not only ſubſtantial grounds for more then bare conjectures, but it may be they will confeſs ſomething too, deſiring your concealment and ſuccour, and they ſhall think themſelves for ever ingaged: after this you may uſe your own diſcretion. Then again, you may perceive by their loitering and diſregard of time, what they expect; for they only bait but to obſerve what purchaſe they can ſee paſs by; which

when

when they have eſpied, they will pretend immediate buſineſs calls them to be gone, and ſo mount in great haſte. Again, when they come to an Inn to lodge, they commonly come in divided, or in ſeveral Companies, fruſtrating the *Hue* and *Cry* by their number: beſides, if one part be ſurprized, the other may eſcape; and when the reſidue comes in, they ſeem as ſtrangers one to the other, enquiring of mine Hoſt what their Companions are, what Countrie-men, whether he knows them? and if they find he hath either jealouſie or ſuſpition of any of them, they will feign ſome buſineſs that neceſſitates their ſpeedy departure: but if you take them for honeſt men, as they met by ſeeming chance in your Kitchin; ſo after ſome formal civil ſalurations, and drinking together, they ſoon become acquainted, and before they part, ſhew much familiaritie. Thus, as I was farther endeavouring to lay open their devices and deceits, to repair what wrong my Countrie had ſuſtained by me, word was brought me, that I muſt immediately appear at the Bar, and there anſwer what ſhould be objected againſt me; and it was but juſt that I ſhould be now expoſed to the Law of Juſtice, ſince I had ſo often rejected and ſlighted the Law of Mercie.

CHAP. LXV.

He received ſentence of Condemnation; he thereupon ſeriouſly contemplates Death, and conſiders Eternity.

APpearing at the Seſſions, and ſeeing ſo many of my Adverſaries ready to give in their evidence againſt me, I concluded my ſelf a loſt

man; my very countenance betrayed both my thoughts of guilt and deſpair. In ſhort, I received ſentence of Death to be hanged at *Tyburn* by the neck till I was dead. I thought theſe ſad tidings would have preſently deprived me of my life, and ſo have ſaved the Hangman a labour. All the way I went back to *Newgate*, I fancied nothing but Gibbets ſtood in my way, and that I ſaw no other trades but Cord-winders. Being entred the priſon, I was forthwith put into the Dungeon, laden with ſhackles: I had not been many hours there, before a charitable Phyſician of the ſoul, I mean a Miniſter, came to viſit me, who adviſed me, to repent, ſince it was high time; and endeavouring to disburden my conſcience, by extracting from me a general ingenious confeſſion of what enormous crimes I had committed. Finding this perſon to have no other deſign, but meerly for my ſouls ſake, I diſſected the actions of my whole life, not omitting any thing that might be accounted ſinful. He was amazed to hear ſuch notorious Roguery in one Man, and ſo young; wherefore, before he applied any cordial, he adminiſtred his corroſives, and ſo thorowly ſearcht every corner of my heart, that there was nothing hid from him. In the firſt place, he made me ſenſible of the wickedneſs of my life, and that every, nay, the leaſt evil action, deſerved the loſs of eternal and inexpreſſible happineſs, and inſtead thereof, torments everlaſting and intolerable. It will take up too much time, to give an account of every thing this pious man alleadged for my information, contrition, and conſolation: ſo effectually and powerfully he delivered his divine Meſſage, that the obdurateneſs

durateneſs of my heart was able to hold out no longer, but melting into tears, was willing to have its flintineſs broken by the hammer of Sacred Writ. Finding me in ſo good a temper, he left me to God and my ſelf, for the perfecting of that work he had ſo hopefully and ſucceſsfully begun. I began to conſider what I was, only a ſtatue of duſt kneaded with tears, and mov'd by the hid engines of reſtleſs paſſions; a clod of earth, which the ſhorteſt Fever can burn to aſhes, and the leaſt ſhowre of rheums waſh away to nothing; and yet I made as great a noiſe in the world, as if both the Globes (thoſe glorious Twins) had been unwombed from that formleſs Chaos, by the Midwifry of my wit: all my actions were attended with ſo much ſucceſs, and ſo anſwerable to my deſires, as if I had been one of heavens privy-Counſellors; which ſwelled me up with ſo much arrogance, that I ſpake thunder, lookt lightning, and breathed deſtruction; and by the eloquence of my own vanity, I perſwaded my ſelf, that the machinations of my brain were able to unhinge the Poles: but it is otherwiſe decreed, that the Miniſters of Juſtice ſhould put a period to my boundleſs pride, to make me know I am but a man, and that mortal too. And having but a ſhort time to live, I thought it very requiſite to think of that which muſt ſhortly be the means to convey me either to bliſs or woe; by ſo doing, I ſeized on death before it ſeized on me. It was the fitteſt ſubject I could buſie my ſoul about; for what more heavenly, than the thought of immortality? and what ſo neceſſary, as the thought of death? *Seneca* ſaith, *When he was a young man, he ſtudied to live well;*

well; when aged, how to dye well: but *I* never practiſed *Artem bene vivendi*, and therefore am ſo ignorant in *Arte bene moriendi*; which makes me ſo fearful, that *I* know not how to be careful of not being found unprepared. Methinks *I* already hear that doleful ſaying, *Ite imparati in paratum.* My ſole companions were now deſpair and fear, for the King of fear is death; and indeed there is nothing abſolutely fearful, but what tends to death; and *I* am confident, the fear of death is worſe than the pains of death: for, fear of death kills us often, whereas death it ſelf can do it but once. Life would not be troubled with too much care, nor death with too much fear, becauſe fears betray, and cares diſorder thoſe ſuccours which reaſon would afford to both: and though ſome ſay, he is more ſorrowful than is neceſſary, that is ſorrowful before there is neceſſity; yet that ſoul cannot be in a good condition, ſo long as it fears to think of dying; but did *I* not ſorrow now, and juſtly fear that meſſenger that muſt bring me before the Tribunal of Heaven, *I* ſhould have too little time to waſh away ſo many black ſpots, eſpecially having nothing but objects of terror and amazement before my eyes; but *I* never needed have feared what *I* ſhould ſuffer when dead, if *I* had not deſerved it whilſt *I* lived. Life is not alike to all men: To ſuch a wicked wretch as *I* am, the beſt had been, that *I* never had been, and the next beſt were to live long; in this condition, it was ill for me that *I* was born, worſe for me that *I* muſt die; for without unfeigned repentance, this dying life will bring me to a living death; whereas a good man is otherwiſe minded, he counts his

end

end the beſt of his being, for that brings him to the fruition of his hope: could death end miſery, it ſhould be the greateſt happineſs I would wiſh: but my conſcience will not let me lye, for I fear the end of my preſent miſeries will be but the beginning of worſe; yea, ſuch as death it ſelf cannot terminate. Now came into my minde the conſideration of Eternity; and with it, I remembred how it was repreſented by the Ancients, which very much helpt my preſent Contemplation; which was thus: A vaſt Den full of horror, round about which a Serpent windes it ſelf, and in the winding bites it ſelf by the tail. At the right-hand of this Den, ſtands a young man of a moſt beautiful and pleaſant countenance, holding in his right-hand a Bow and two Arrows, and in his left an Harp. In the entrance ſits an old man oppoſite, and having his eyes very intent on his Table-book, writes according to the dictations of the young man ſtanding by. At the left-hand of this Den, ſits a grave Matron gray-headed, and having her eyes always buſied. At the mouth hereof, are four ſtairs aſcending by degrees; the firſt is of iron, the ſecond of braſs, the third of ſilver, and the laſt of gold: On theſe are little children ſporting up and down, playing, fearleſs, and inapprehenſive of falling. The ſight of this Emblem of Eternity inculcated into my thoughts this interpretation: The Den, which was bottomleſs, ſignified to me the incomprehenſibility of Eternity; the circumferating Serpent, Time; the young man, Nature; on Earth and Hell are her arrows faſtned; but in Heaven there is the Harp, fulneſs of joy, and pleaſures inexpreſſible: The old man

I lookt upon to be Fate; the grave Matron, Providence; the Stairs, diſtinct Times and Ages; the Children running up and down the Stairs without fear of danger, do ſignifie fooliſh Man and Woman, who regardleſs of their ſalvation, ſport and play with it ſo long, till they ſlipt into Eternity. So have I been careleſs of that which ſhould have been my greateſt care, though I knew (but would not know) that the leaſt and lighteſt touch of death were ſufficient, in a moment, to tranſlate me from Time to Eternity. Were we all to live a thouſand years (whereas the Executioner is to put a period to my life in one day longer) we ſhould before we had ran half our courſe, in our very non-age, apply our ſelves to repentance and newneſs of life. Now, now is the time, every hour, every moment: now one part of an hour (as I am informed, to my great comfort) may obtain pardon here, which all Eternity cannot hereafter. Therefore, let this now be my time (this one day I have left me) to cancel my debts and treſpaſſes againſt Heaven, which I can never do in Hell-fire, in all the years and times to come hereafter. Let ſuch who have liv'd (as I) in all manner of wickedneſs, conſider what Eternity is, which may make them return like the penitent Prodigal. What then is Eternity? It is a Circle running back into it ſelf, whoſe center is every where, and circumference no where, that is to ſay, infinite: It is an Orb that hath neither beginning nor ending: Or it is a Wheel,

Volvitur & volvetur in omne volubilis ævum.

A Wheel that turns, a Wheel that turned ever:
A Wheel that turns, and will leave turning never.

Eter-

Eternity is like a year, continually wheeling about, which returns again to the ſame point from whence it began, and ſtill wheels about again. It is an ever-running Fountain, whither the waters after many turnings flow back again, that they may always flow. It is a bottomleſs pit, whoſe revolutions are endleſs. It may be compared to a ſnake bowed back unto it ſelf orbicularly, holding its tail in its mouth; which in its end doth again begin, and never ceaſeth to begin. What is Eternity? It is a duration always preſent; it is one perpetual day; which is not divided into that which is paſt, and that which is to come: Or, it is an age of ages, never expiring, and never changing: Or, more properly, it is a beginning continuing, never ending, always beginning, in which the bleſſed always begin a bleſſed life, in which the damned always die, and after all death and ſtruggling therewith, always begin again to die. As Hell-torments are eternal, ſo will the conſcience be perpetually tormented with deep and horrid deſpair for the life paſt: Their worm ſhall not die. The Poets of old alluded to this place notably, in that Fiction or Fable of *Tytius*, whom *Virgil* feigneth, that a flying Vulture every day gnaws and tears his Liver, which is every night again repaired and made up, that every day the Vulture may have more matter to prey upon. What is this Vulture, but the worm I ſpeak of? and what is his Liver, but the conſcience always gnawn and tormented? Not only this (as he that preacht my Funeral-Sermon told me) but all the torments of the damned ſhall never have end, becauſe there can be no place for

for satisfaction: For although these inexpressible torments shall continue many millions of years; yet shall there not one hour, no, not one minute of respite be granted: Let us then be no longer forgetful of our selves, and so degenerate into beasts, but seriously to consider our end, and what shall come after. All men are in the way of Eternity, but I am now almost at my journeys end: I sit on the Stairs of Eternity, expecting when one small thrust shall plunge me into the bottomless pit, where one hours punishment shall be more grievous, (as *Thomas à Kempis* saith) then 100 years here in the bitterest 6f torments: There they are tortured for infinite millions of ages, & are so far from finding an end, as never to be able to hope for any end. The consideration of these things brought me to that pass, as I was content to suffer any thing in this life, so that I might not suffer in the life to come. Though a King, I should willingly and patiently have endured what *Andronicus* did, Emperour of the East; who (as History relates) being overcome and taken prisoner by *Isaac Angelo*, had immediately two great chains of iron put about his neck; and being laden with fetters, was brought before *Isaac*, who delivered him over to the rage of the multitude, to be abused at their pleasure. This rabble being incenst and stimulated on by revenge, some buffeted him, some bastinado'd him, others pulled him by the beard, twitching the hair from his head, dashing out his teeth, dragging him in publick through the streets: the insolence of women was such, as to fall upon him, leaving the marks of their nails in his Imperial face. After all this, they

they cut off his right-hand: thus maimed and bruised, he was thrown into the Dungeon of Thieves and Robbers, without either attendance, or the least thing necessary to sustain life: Some few days being past, they put out one of his eyes: thus mangled, they put him upon an old rotten short coat, shav'd his head, set him upon a scabbed Camel, with his face towards the Tail, put on his head a crown of Garlick, made him hold in his hand the Camels Tail instead of a Septer, and so they carried him through the Market-place very leisurely, with great pomp & triumph. Here did the most impudent crew, and base among the people, like Tygers, after an inhumane manner fall upon him, not considering in the least, that not three days before he was no less then an Emperour, crowned with a Royal Diadem, whose frowns were inevitable death, was honoured, yea, adored of all men. Their rage and madness fitted every one with instruments to execute their revenge: Some struck him on the head with sticks, others fill'd his nostrils with dirt, others squeezed spunges upon his face soaked in humane and beastial excrements: some threw stones, others dirt at him. An impudent woman as he past, came running out with scalding water in her hand, and poured it on his head. All these indignities which they exercised upon this poor Emperor, did not satisfie their insatiate revenge, but bringing him to the Theatre, took him down from the Camel, and hung him up by the heels: yet did he behave himself like a man, by bearing patiently what was inflicted upon him, being never heard to cry out against the cruelty of his fate. All that he was heard

heard to ſay, was this, which he often repeated, *Domine miſerere, Domine miſerere.* Thus hanging up, one would have thought their malice ſhould have ceaſed; but they ſpared him not as long as he lived; for pulling his Coat from his body, they tore him with their nails. One more cruel than the reſt, ran his Sword through his bowels as he was hanging: Two others, to try whoſe Sword was ſharpeſt, cut him and gaſht him in ſeveral places; and ſo ended his life miſerably, but was not ſuffered to be buried. Oh, that my condition were as *Andronicus*, to ſuffer all that man can lay upon me, that I might not periſh for ever: I would be content to be miſerable for ſo ſhort a time, that I may not be miſerable to all Eternity. Queſtioneſs he could never have ſuffered ſuch things ſo conſtantly and couragiouſly, but that he had Eternity in his thoughts; and were our mindes imployed about the ſame ſubject, any adverſity or affliction we ſhould more eaſily bear. From the time of my condemnation till Munday morning I ſlept not, neither did I eat or drink: then did I hear my paſſing-bell (having heard the day before my Funeral-Sermon) every ſtroke methought carried my ſoul one degree higher, being confident I had made my peace above. Whilſt I was in the depth of Meditation, and my ſoul breathing out this ſhort ejaculation.

Is there no hope now of Relief,
In this Extremity?
Mercy e're now hath sav'd a Thief,
And may do as much for me.

Behold, a friend came to me (that never visited me during my imprisonment) but now in the time of need brought me a Reprieve: when I lookt thereon at first, I could not believe my own eyes; I thought I dreamt, or that grief had so distracted me, as that I imagined things that are not. My friend at length cleer'd up my doubts; but I shall tell you this for a truth, I knew not whether I were best accept of this self-preserving courtesie: For, methought I had so well settled my eternal concerns, as that I had nothing else to do but die.

About a fortnight after, I was sent aboard, in order to my transportation; my sentence of Death being converted into a seven years banishment.

CHAP. LXVI.

Being on Board, he deſcants on his enſuing miſery; yet draws comfort to himſelf from the ſufferings of others. He relateth how he was freed from his intended baniſhment by a double Shipwrack; the manner thereof he amply declareth.

THe Ship that was to tranſport me lay at *Wollidge* about the latter end of *Auguſt* 1650. I was conveyed aboard a luſty Ship, a *Virginia*-Merchantman, and was inſtantly clapt under hatches; but I knew they would quickly call me aloft, if there was any fighting work; as ſuch a thing might eaſily be, ſince the Sea was no where free from ſuch as would make a prize of what Veſſels were too weak to contend with them. Having pen, ink, and paper about me, I buſied my thoughts and pen in contriving conſolation for my diſquieted and diſconſolate mind, thus:

Why ſhould not I with patience ſuffer? ſome
Have kiſt what brought them to their Martyrdom.
Many a Saint hath ſuffer'd on a Croſs;
And our good King endur'd three Kingdoms loſs.
Shall I (fool) then at any croſs take grief?
Tyburn's *the way to heaven for many a Thief.*
But muſt I now to Sea? well, 'tis no matter;
Fortune now frowns, though heretofore did flatter.
Let not my ſoul deſpond, ſince 'tis my hap,
I'll ſcorn that Whore, *and truſt to* Thetis *lap:*

Though

Though she *may foam with anger, and the wind*
May aggravate her passion, I may find
Her calm again, and set me on that shore,
Where I may Moar, and put to Sea no more.
Neptune *may shake his* Trident, *and each wave,*
Or tumbling billow may become my grave.
A thundring Canon may pronounce my death,
Or a small shot bereave me of my breath:
All which may throng together in full crowds,
To make m'a winding-sheet *of* tatter'd shrowds.
The winds shall sing my requiem, *and my knell*
Shall be a peal of Ordnance, that shall tell
My angry fates I'm dead and the Sea must
Intomb without the form of dust *to* dust.
But I hope better things and do believe,
My good events will make the furies *grieve.*

About the beginning of *September* following, we set sail for the *Downs*. As soon as we had weighed Anchor, a thick melancholly cloud encompassed my thoughts, and so much sadness seized my spirits, as if I had been not so much taking my leave of my dearly beloved Country, as leaving the world. Though my soul could not foresee the least danger, nor be troubled at the apprehension of what slavery I was to undergo in my exilment; yet certainly I found this strange anguish and propassion to be ominous, proceeding from somthing divine, which is able to unriddle the Apocrypha of nature, and made my soul sensible of some approaching mischief. Having been about five days at Sea, one morning, just as the Sun began to gild our Hemisphere with his Golden rays, the Boatswain made us al turn out, & commanded al

hands upon deck: coming aloft, I could not see a man in whose face there was not written the pale characters of fear and amazement; which were the infallible marks of some sudden and ensuing danger. Upon my first coming on board, I could discern a great many rednos'd fellows (a drunkards truest *indicium*) but the apprehension of present danger had now extinguisht all those flaming torches of their faces, without the help of water: The faces indeed of the stoutest amongst us, were so altered by this affrightment, that we knew not almost one another; losing our natural complexions, through the extremity of passion. One was at his prayers, that never till then knew what a prayer was; another shedding of *briny tears*, to make room for more *salt waters*: for my own part, I found my self not much moved, having lately made my self acquainted with death. By this time I understood what had past; that is, our Ship had sprung a leak, and was ready to sink. Seeing every man in that posture, and that there required means, as well as prayers for our preservation; Come (said I, Gentlemen) let us not thus cry out, and never lend our assisting hand; let us to the pump, and let every one be imployed in this grand concern. Whereupon we all unanimously fell to work: but as it is usual in such extreams, we were all busie about doing of nothing; what we began we left imperfect, and fell to another, and so perfected nothing to our safety. Some were sent down into the Hold, who quickly returned to us with the symptoms of death in their countenances; for they all with hesitations and quivering of tongue, with words abruptly or half spoken, signified to us, that our Ships wound was incurable, that the leak could

could not be ſtopt, but that we muſt inevitably periſh within ſome minutes. Theſe words I received as from a Deaths-head, which I never heard ſpeak before; and truly his very looks would have ſufficiently declared what meſſage he was about to deliver, *viz.* ruine and immediate deſtruction. Our inexpreſſible fears bereaved us of the power of counſelling one another; neither did we know what was beſt to be done. Our Maſter commanded our Long-boat to be caſt out, and withall, ordered ſome eight Guns to be fir'd, which methought reſembled ſo many toles of my *Paſſing-bell*, when I was deſign'd to paſs by St. *Sepulchres Church* in a Cart, guarded by fellows whoſe viſages were the true reſemblance of the *Saracens-head* on *Snow-hill*, for terror, horror, and merciles proceeding; as to all which, theſe *Canibals* will outvie that inhumane and bloody Nation. Every man indeavoured to ſhift for himſelf, and I among the reſt (being loath to be drowned alone) leapt ſhort of the boat, and fell into the Sea *in Charontis Cymba*; but neceſſity then forcing me to uſe treble diligence to recover my ſelf, with much difficulty I got into the boat: I was no ſooner there, but another leapt down upon me, and had like to have beaten the reſt of my breath out of my body: which I took kindly enough; for I would have been content to have born them all on my back, nay, boat and all, ſo that I might have eſcaped with life. We were conſtrained to leave many of our friends behind us, and committed our ſelves to the Sea, driving us we knew not whither. Now were all our hopes *daſhed*, as well as our ſelves, by the waves; for we were almoſt in deſpair of humane help: for we were left in the wide Ocean, which did not at

that time wear a ſmooth brow, but contending with the wind, ſwell'd into prodigious mountains, which every moment threatned our overwhelming. How could we expect ſafety in an open Shaloup, when ſo ſtately a Caſtle of wood, which we but now loſt, could not defend it ſelf, nor preſerve us from the inſolency of the imperious waves? We were many leagues from any ſhore, having neither Compaſs to guide us, nor proviſion to ſuſtain us, being as well ſtarv'd with cold as hunger. Several bags of Money we had with us; but what good could that do us, where there is no exchange? We could neither eat nor drink it; neither would it keep us warm, nor purchaſe our deliverance. Therefore we may juſtly eſteem of money in its own nature, as an impotent creature, a very cripple, *inutile pondus*, an uſeleſs burden. I could not now imagine any thing could preſerve us, leſs then a miracle: and as we were all ſinful creatures, eſpecially my ſelf, we could not expect that nature ſhould go out of her ordinary way to ſave us. The waves indeed carried us up to Heaven,

Jam jam tacturos ſidera ſumma putes.

Neptune ſure at this time was very *gameſome*, for he play'd at *Tennis* with us poor mortals, making a *wave* his *Racket* to bandie us up and down like *Bal's*: Sometimes we ſeem'd ſo proud and *loſty*, being raiſed ſo *high*, as if we had been about to *ſcale Heaven*; which the incenſed Deity perceiving ſeemed again to throw us down headlong to Hell, for too much ambition and preſumption: yet I could not ſee, but that the extremity of our condition

pleaded

pleaded for us, crying aloud for pity and compassion. I now was silent, committing my self into the hands of providence; yet verily believing, that the invertion of the old Proverb appertained to me, that being not born to be hang'd, I should be drown'd. Commonly we are not so much mov'd with a clamorous and importunate beggar, who hunts after our Alms with open mouth, and makes *Hue* and *Cry* after our Charity (as if we had rob'd him who begs of us) as with the silence of impotent and diseased *Lazaro's*: their sores speak loudest to our affections: *Quot vulnera, tot ora*; each wound is a gaping mouth strenuously imploring mercy; the sight whereof, cannot but melt the most obdurate spectator into a charitable compassion. This was our case, our misery was louder than our prayers, and our deplorable condition, certainly was more prevalent then our imperfect devotions. In this moment of death, when we were without the least expectation of any deliverance the wind chopt about, and drove back one Ship that had over-run us: this was unquestionably *Digitus Dei*. This Ship made towards us, and we what in us lay, towards it: The wind blew hard, and the insulting Sea, that will not admit of pity, rose high upon us: so that we were forced to lave the water out of the boat with our hats. It was my chance to sit on the weather side; fain would I have exchanged my place, but such complements are useless in a storm; so that I was constrained to endure patiently the indignation of my raging enemy. But now began another dispair; for with all our endeavours we could not reach the Ship, nor she us, although she hung on the Lee to retard her course. Thus our pregnant hopes

brought forth nothing but wind and water (for the Ship rode on furiouſly before the wind, and we came after in purſuit of her, as ſlowly as if an hedg-hog had been running with a Race-horſe;) ſo that we which before flattered our ſelves with an aſſurance of ſafety, were as much confounded with a certainty of periſhing. In my opinion it is better to have no hopes at all, than be diſappointed in them: doubtleſs it did redouble the puniſhment of *Tantalus*, to touch what he could not taſte. That Mariner, who ſeeing a fatal neceſſity for it, is contented to die in a tempeſt, would be exceedingly troubled to periſh in a Haven, *In Portu perire*. In this very condition were we, having a Ship near us, but could not board her for ſtreſs of weather; ſo that ruine attended us, though all the while we lookt ſafety in the face. Now did it grow dark, whereby we could not ſee which way to row: though this was an evil in its own nature, yet accidentally it became our benefit: for not ſeeing our danger, we underſtood it not; but redoubling our ſtrength, we brake through the waves, and by the aſſiſtance of a light, which was in the Ship, we directed our courſe truly; and now did we find we were very neer her. As ſoon as we toucht her on the Lee-ſide, the Sea-men, with the reſt in the boat, being more dexterous in the art of climbing than my ſelf, never regarding their *exil'd Priſoner*, (whom they ought to have taken charge of) got all up into the Ship in a moment, leaving me alone in the boat. By good hap they threw me out a Rope, which once had like to have de prived me of my life, but was now the preſerver: which I held faſt, to keep the boat from ſtaving off. Our boat was half full of water, and the waves

daſht

dasht it so violently against the Ship-side, that every such stroke struck me down, so that I had like to have been drowned (and did much fear it) in that epitome of the Sea. It would have vexed a man in my condition, to escape by swimming over a large *River*, and coming ashore, to be drowned in a *wash-bowl*. At last with much difficulty I got aboard too. The Master, Merchants, *&c.* having sav'd their lives (even miraculously) one would have thought they should not have been so pensive as they were for the loss of their goods. Those which lost much, took it very heavily; those which lost less, their affliction was greater, having lost all: I was the most glad, joy riding in triumph in my chearful countenance, having lost nothing, neither could I any thing, but my life. Having escapt so miraculously, it was unchristian-like to murmur at any loss; and as ridiculous, as if a man being restored to life, should complain that his winding-sheet had sustained some damage by lying in the grave. The Ship wherein we were, was bound for the *Canaries*, the winde blowing very fair for that coast. The second night after our deliverance, about ten a clock, having set our Watch, we laid our selves down to rest, with the thoughts of much safety and security, but it was otherwise decreed; for about one a clock we were forced to use all hands *aloft*, a most terrible storm beginning to arise, and the wind blew so furiously, that before morning we lost our Bow-sprit and Mizon: we durst not bear the least sayl, but let the Ship drive whither the winde and waves pleased; and before the next night, we could not indure our remaining Masts standing, but were necessitated to cut them by the board. Thus we were

tumbled

tumbled up and down for four dayes, and as many nights, contending with the waves in a *Pitcht-battel*, not knowing where we were, till our Ship ſtruck ſo violently againſt a Rock, that the horrid noiſe thereof would have even made a dead man ſtartle; to which, add the hideous cries of the Sea-men, bearing a part with the whiſtling windes & roaring Sea; all which together, ſeemed to me to be the trueſt Repreſentation of the Day of Judgement. The Ship ſtuck faſt ſo long between two Rocks, as that we had time enough, all of us, to leap out; the only means left us for our ſafety. We all got upon a Rock, and the Morning-ſtar having drawn the Curtain of the night, we found that we were a very little diſtance from the ſhore; getting thereon, and ranging to and fro, we at laſt eſpied a ſmall houſe, the ſight whereof made us direct our foot-ſteps thither, ſteering our courſe ſolely by the compaſs of our eyes: being come to the houſe, the Maſter thereof ſtood at the door; we addreſt our ſelves to him in *Engliſh*, but his replications were in *Spaniſh*, wich we underſtood not: wherefore I ſpake to him in Latine, in which language he anſwered me, *Tam compte, tam prompte*, both quaintly and readily. In that tongue I made a ſhift to tell him the ſad Illiades of our misfortunes. This noble *Spaniard* underſtood it better by our looks, than my relations; which made ſuch a deep impreſſion in his ſoul, that his *gravity* could not forbear the ſhedding of ſome few tears, ſo that one would have thought he ſuffered Shipwrack as well as we. He deſired us to come into his houſe, & refreſh our ſelves: what little meat he had, ſtew'd in a horſe-load of herbs, with ſome pottage onely ſeaſoned by a piece of Bacon,

Bacon, that had serv'd for that purpose at least a dozen times, he ordered to be set before us; being no wayes sparing of his wine, better than any I ever yet could taste in Taverns; this good man being not acquainted with *dashings*, *dulcifyings*, &c. Seeing us eat so heartily, he caused another dish to be provided, which was composed of such variety of creatures, that I thought he had served us in as a *Mess*, *the first Chapter of Genesis*: This *Olla-podridra* was so *cookt*, that the distinction of each creature was *stuc'd* out of our knowledge. Having satisfied our hungry stomachs, he dismist all excepting my self, desiring me to accept of what kindness he could do me, for he confest he took much pleasure in my society and discourse. I was very well contented to entertain his proffer: in some few dayes he told me he was to go to Sea, being Captain of a Vessel that lay in *Perinbane*, a small Sea-faring Town near the place of our Shipwrack; and asking me whether I would go with him to the *Indies* (whither he was bound,) I readily consented, and in some few dayes after we did sail from thence, to perfect our intended Voyage.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXVII.

From Perimbana, *a small maritime Town on the* Spanish *coast, he sets sail with Captain* Ferdinando Velasquez *bound to the* East-Indies; *but by the way meets with three Turkish Galleys, and by them is taken, miserably abused, and imprisoned.*

AN hour before day we left the Port, and sailed along the coast before the winde; about noon we discerned three vessels, whereupon we gave them chase: in less than two hours we got up to them, and then we could easily perceive that they were Turkish Galleys; whereof we were no sooner assured, but we betook our selves to flight, making to Land with all speed possible, to avoid the danger that inevitably threatned us. The *Turks* understanding our design, presently hoisted up all their sails, and having the wind favourable, bore up to us so close, and getting within a small Faulcon-shot of us, they discharged their Ordnance on us, wherewith they killed eight of our men, and wounded as many more; and so battered our Ship beside, that we were forc'd to throw a great quantity of our lading over-board. The *Turks* in the mean while lost no time, but grappled us; we on the other side, who were able to fight, knowing that on our valour & undaunted courage depended our lives, or loss of liberty, with perpetual slavery, resolved to fight it out. With this determination we boarded their Admiral, doing very eminent execu-

tion;

don; but being over-powred with numbers, we were so overpresst and wearied, that we desisted from making any further resistance: For, of 35 men we had at first, we only had remaining ten, whereof two died the next day, whom the *Turks* caused to be cut in pieces or quarters, which they hung at the end of their Main-yard for a sign of Victory. Being taken, we were carried by them to a Town called *Mecaa*, and received by the Governor and Inhabitants, who expected and waited the coming of these Pirates. In the company was likewise one of the chiefest Sacerdotal dignity; and because he had been a little before in Pilgrimage at the Temple of their Prophet *Mahomet* in *Meca*, he was honoured and esteemed by all the people as a very holy man. This Mahometan Impostor rid in a triumphant Chariot up & down the Town, covered all over with silk Tapistry, and with a deal of ceremonious fopperies, bestowed on the people his benediction as he passed along, exhorting them to return hearty thanks to their great Prophet for this Victory obtained over us. The Inhabitants hearing that we were Christians taken Captives, flockt about us; and being exceedingly transported with choler, fell to beating of us in that cruel manner, that I thought it a vain thing to hope to escape alive out of their hands; and all this, because we owned the names of Christians. When I was in *England*, I justly was sentenced to die for my villany, and now here only for the bare profession of Christianity, I must not be suffered to live. This wicked *Cæcis* (as they called him) instigated them on to those outrages they committed; who made them believe, that the worse they dealt with us, the more favour and mercy they should

ſhould receive from *Mahomet* hereafter. We were chained all together, and in that manner were we led in triumph; and as we paſt along, we had our heads waſht with womens Roſe-water, thrown down upon us from Balconies, with other filth, in deriſion and contempt of the name of Chriſtian; wherein every one ſtrived to be moſt forward, being inſtigated thereunto by their Prieſt. My ſufferings then, put me in mind of my former wiſhes, to be as unfortunate *Andronicus*, miſerably afflicted here, that I might eſcape eternal torments hereafter: I received in part the effect of my *quondam* wiſhes, no ways acceptable to my preſent deſires. Having tyred themſelves in tormenting us till the evening, bound as we were, they clapt us into the Dungeon, where we remained 21 dayes expoſed to all kind of miſery, having no other proviſion allowed us, than a little Oat-meal or Rice and water, which was diſtributed to us every morning, what ſhould ſerve us for that whole day: for variety ſake, we had ſometimes a ſmall quantity of Peaſe ſoak'd in water.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXVIII.

He is brought forth into the Market-place, and there put to sale; he is bought by a Jew *(a miserable avaricious man) and by a stratagem he delivers himself from that Master, is sold to a* Græcian, *in heart a Christian: the Ship being taken, and his Master drowned, he escaping to shore by swimming, is at his own liberty.*

IN the morning the Goaler repairing to us, found two of our miserable companions dead, by reason of their wounds, which were many, and not lookt into. This made him haste to the *Guazil* or Judge, to acquaint him of what had hapned; who upon information given, came to the prison in person, attended with Officers and other people: where having caused their irons to be struk off, he ordered their bodies to be dragged thorow the Town, and so cast in the Sea. We that remained were chained altogether, and so led out of prison unto the common place of sale, to be sold to him that should give most. By reason of my strength (which those that lookt on me might argue, from the streightness and firmness of my limbs, being elevated by the Pole above a common or middle stature) I was first bought by one, whom at the first sight, I could not well tell whether he was Man or Devil; for his complexion was of the same colour as the Devil is usually rendred: to say all in short, he was a *Jew*. He carried me home to his house, where I no sooner arrived, but he markt me for his own:

My

My employment was constantly to turn a hand-mill; if I rested at any time, though ever so little, the punishment he inflicted on me was, three or four blows on either the belly or souls of my feet; which were doubled or trebled according as he judged of my offence: my diet was such as only served to keep me alive. In general he used me so cruelly, that becoming desperate, I once thought it better resolutely to cut the thread of my life, than spin it out longer in so much wretchedness & misery. Revenge too induc'd me to the undertaking of this attempt, as knowing him to be the most covetous wretch living, and therefore would even hang himself when he should lose what he payed for me: but reconsidering my self, I made choice of a better expedient, which was to pretend (what I intended not) to kill my self, I made choice of such a time, when I was sure some one or other was set to watch me; who perceiving that I was about to destroy my self, rusht in and prevented me, and went forthwith to inform my Master of what he had seen; advising him withall to sell me out of hand, otherwise he would infallibly be a loser by me. My Master taking notice of my countenance and behaviour, resolved to put his friends counsel in practise, and so sold me to another, who fortunately proved a Greek, that in shew was a *Mahometan*, but cordially a Christian. Once more was I delivered from miseries that are hardly to be endured, and was imbarqued with my new Master in a Ship bound for the *East-Indies*. In the course that we held, we sail'd with so prosperous a gale, that in a very short time we arrived in view of the Fort of *Diu*; but seeing several vessels lying before that Fort, firing against it in an hostile manner

we

shaped our course to *Goa*, where we arrived in safety. From hence we sayled unto the River *Lugor*: just as we were entring its Mouth, we saw a great *Junk* coming upon us, which perceiving us to be few in number, and our Vessel but small, fell close with our Prow on the Larboard-side, and then those that were in her, threw in to us great Cramp-irons fastned unto two long chains, wherewith they grappled us fast unto them; which they had no sooner done, but incontinently some seventy or eighty *Mahometans* started out from under the Hatches, that till then had lain lurking there; and pouring out their small-shot upon us, clapt us aboard in an instant. Those that knew what it was to be a slave to the merciless *Turks*, leapt into the Sea, whereof I was one: we were not far from land, so that it was not long before I got safe to shore; it was my Masters misfortune (and truly I think my unhappiness, for he behaved himself to me as to one of his familiar friends) being wounded, & ignorant in swimming, to be entomb'd in the deep. There were some five or six more that escapt the danger of their enemies and the Sea, that wading up to the Waste in mud, landed in safety; with these I hid my self in the next adjacent Wood. There was hardly one of us but received some hurt; and being now divested of all hope of help, we could not forbear to unman our selves by weeping, complaining against our hard destiny, that should in so short a time bring us into so sad a disaster. In this desolation we spent the remaining tragical part of the day; but considering with our selves, that the place was mooriſh, and full of venemous creatures, we betook our selves to the *Ooze*, standing therein up to the middle. The next

morning, by break of day, we went along by the River-ſide, until we came to a little Channel, which we durſt not paſs (not knowing its depth) for fear of Lizards, plenty whereof we had ſight of therein: we wandred ſo long to avoid this and the Bogs covered with ruſhes, which environed us about, till that we were forced to reſt our ſelves, being ſo weary and ſo hungry, that we could not go one ſtep farther. In the morning awaking, four of our company lay dead, ſo that there was only one remaining to bear me company: I now thought my condition worſe than if I had hung at *Tyburn*, ſurrounded with a full Jury of fellow-ſufferers: my companion and I, with tears, ſang the obſequies of our dead friends, expecting hourly our own diſſolution: Their bodies we covered with a little earth, as well as we could; for we were then ſo feeble, that we could hardly ſtir, nay, nor ſpeak. In this place we reſted our ſelves, intending to bear our friends company to their eternal reſt. Some four hours after this our reſolution, about Sun-ſet, we eſpied a Barque rowing up the River: coming near us we hailed her, and proſtrating our ſelves on the ground, beſeeched thoſe that were in her to receive us on board. Amazed to ſee us in that poſture on our bended knees, and hands lifted up to Heaven, they ſtopt: our cries for ſuccour reacht their eares, which obtained commiſeration from their hearts; ſo taking us in, they carried us with them to *Lugor*, where about Noon next day we landed. The people are fearful black like the Devil, whom they ſuperſtitiouſly worſhip, in the form of a bloody Dragon: They have many Idols amongſt them which they hold in great eſteem, as a Ram-goat, a Bat, an

Owl,

Owl, a Snake, or Dog, to whom they ceremoniously bow or kneel, groveling upon the earth, and throwing dust on their faces; they offer Rice, Roots, Herbs, and the like, which is devoured by the Witches; these devilliſh creatures being both feared and eſteemed by the Savages. The female ſex, againſt the appearing of the New-moon, aſſemble upon a Mountain, where turning up their bare bums, they contemptuouſly defie the Queen of Heaven, who hath this deſpight ſhewn her, becauſe they ſuppoſe her the cauſer of their monthly-courſes. They are much given to novelties, amongſt which dogs are of very great value with them: Inſomuch, that whilſt I was there, I ſaw ſix ſlaves exchanged for one *Europæan* Cur. They abound with the choiceſt of natures bleſſings, as health, ſtrength, and wealth, but are very inhumane and uncivil; for they delight much to feed on mans fleſh, eating it with more ſatisfaction than any other food. Upon my firſt arrival, I did not rightly underſtand their meaning by feeling my fleſh, but when I was informed, that like Butchers, they felt my flank to know how fat I was, they never touch't me afterwards with their fingers, but I fancied my ſelf either boiled or roaſted, and that their hands, my bearers, were conveying me to the open Sepulchres of their mouths, to be entombed in the gut-rumbling Monument of their bellies: whereas other Anthropophagi content their appetites with the fleſh of their enemies, theſe covet moſt their friends, whom they imbowel with much greedineſs, ſaying, they can no way better expreſs a true affection, than to incorporate their deareſt friends and relations into themſelves, as in love before, now in body, uniting two in one (in my

opinion) a bloody ſophiſtry. It is a very truth, of which I was an eye-witneſs, they have Shambles of men and womens fleſh, joynted and cut into ſeveral pieces fit for dreſſing. It is uſual for ſome, either weary of life, or ſo ſick, they have no hopes of recovery, to proffer themſelves to theſe inhumane Butchers, who returning them thanks, diſſect or cut them out into ſmall parcels, and ſo are ſodden and eaten. It is a cuſtom among them, when they would add to their beauties (deformity) to ſlaſh their faces in ſeveral places. They adore thoſe two glorious Planets, the Sun and Moon, believing they live in Matrimony. They are much addicted to rapine and theevery, and they chuſe to commit any villany rather by day than night, becauſe they ſuppoſe thereby the Moon and Stars will never give teſtimony againſt them. Their heads are long, and their hair curled, ſeeming rather wool than hair: Their ears are very long, being extended by ponderous bawbles they hang there, ſtretching the holes to a great capacity. Both men and women hideouſly ſlaſh their fleſh in ſundry forms; their brows, noſes, cheeks, arms, breaſts, back, belly, thighs and legs, are pinkt, and cut in more admirable (than amiable) manner. They contemn apparel, and indeed, the heat of the Climate will not permit them to wear any; very few have nothing on to cover their ſecrets. Moſt have but one ſtone, the other is forced away in their infancy, that *Venus* may not too much allure them from Martial exploits: wherefore the women take great delight in ſtrangers. One of them ſo ſtrongly beſieged my modeſty, that more for fear than love, I yielded to her incontinency: I was diſpleaſed at nothing but the ſight of her; for her fleſh, no Velvet could

could be softer. There are in this place great quantity of Lions, which in dark weather use great subtility to catch and eat some Savages: They again in the day-time dig pits, and covering them with boughs, do train the couragious Lions thither, where they receive destruction, eating them to day, who perhaps were Sepulchres to their friends or parents the day before. I have seen these well-bred people descend in a morning from the Mountains, adorned with the raw guts of Lions or other wilde beasts, serving for an hour or two for chains or neck-laces, and afterwards for their breakfast; of which good chear, if I would not participate, I might fast for them: so that my squeamish stomack was forc'd to give entertainment to that unwelcome guest, to keep starving out of doors. The Ship that brought us hither, was now ready to set sail, being bound for *Goa*, the Master whereof was a *Portugal*, who understood Latine and French very well, of which I was not ignorant: I addrest my self to him in the French tongue, desiring him to accept of mine and my Comerades service; which he condescended to with much willingness. At *Goa* we stayed not long, but from thence passing towards *Surrat*, a vehement and unexpected storm overtook us, for three dayes raging incessantly, so that those which were acquainted with those parts, very much feared an *Hero-cane*, a tempest commonly of thirty dayes continuance, and of such fury, that Ships, Trees, and Houses perish unavoidably in it: once in nine years, it seems, it fails not to visit them. It chanc'd, that my Comerade being heedless and unexperienc'd in Sea-affairs, was washt off by a wave into the Sea, and so was buried in the large and

deep grave of the vaſt Ocean; a ſure treaſury for the reſurrection. The foulneſs of the weather forc'd a *Junk*-man of War, full of deſperate *Malabars*, a bloody and warlike people, in view of us; but the Seas were too lofty for them to board us. After three watches, the Sea changed colour, and was calmer; and by the ſwimming of many ſnakes about our Veſſel, the Sea-men knew we were not far from ſhore, landing ſhortly after ſafely at *Surrat*.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXIX.

From hence he set sail to Swalley-Road, *and so from thence coasted till he arrived at* Delyn *a Town that belongs to the* Malabars: *he gives an account of what he there saw and observed.*

SOme two hours after we set sail, we were becalmed, having not the least breeze of winde, the weather withall being exceeding hot and sultry: at length we arrived in *Swalley-Road*, where was riding an English Vessel; there we cast anchor, the English men came aboard of us, whom our Captain welcomed with the best of his entertainment. I could not forbear embracing my dear Country-men, shewing them so many demonstrations of joy, that by their looks, they seemed to question whether I was in my right wits. Their Masters-mate calling me aside, askt me, how I came to be ingaged in this Vessel? how long since I came from *England*? with many other questions too tedious here to relate. To all which I gave him such satisfactory answers, that he seemed very well pleased. I gave him a summary relation of what I had suffer'd, since my departure from my own Country; the report whereof, seemed to extract much pity from him. In fine, I told him, I had a great desire to see *England* again, and to that end desired him to make use of what interest he could, to remove me into their Ship: he promised he would; and accordingly giving a Present to our Captain, he

so far prevailed upon him to let me go, and perswaded the chief of whom he was concerned withal, to entertain me, which they did with much willingness. I was so like a Sea-man in this short time, that none could distinguish me from one that received his first rocking in a Ship. I carried about me as deep an hoguo of Tarpawlin as the best of them, and there was no term of art belonging to any part of the Ship or tackling, but what I understood. I could drink water that stunk (as if *stercus humanum* had been steept two or three days in it) as well as any of them, and eat beef and pork (that stirred as if it had received a second life, and was crawling out of the platter to seek out the rest of his Members) I say, I could devour it with as much greediness (scorning that my appetite should be ever again taxed with any of those Epithetes, either nice or squea mish) as if it had been but nine hours, instead of nine Months, in salt. And to make me the more compleat, I had forgot to wash either hands or face, or what the use of a comb or shirt was, neither did I know how to undress my self; or if wet to the skin, to make use of any other means than my natural heat to dry my self: I never lookt on a hat or band, but as Prodigies. But to return to my purpose, where I left off. In three days time we set sail for *Swalley-Road*, steering our course from them all along the coast of *India*, *Decan*, and *Malabar*. I knew not whither they intended, neither did I care now, as thinking my self safe, being amongst my friends: on the 20 of *April*, seven days from our weighing anchor in *Swalley-Road*, we came to an anchor at *Delyn*, a Town of the *Malabars*: We durst not land, the people being so treacherous and bloody;

yet

yet we ſuffered them to come aboard us in their ſmall Canoos, ſelling us for any trifles, Coco-nuts, Jacks, Green-pepper, Indian-peaſe, Hens, Eggs, and the like. They brought us likewiſe Oranges of ſo pleaſant a taſte, the rinde vying with the juice, which ſhall become moſt grateful to the palate: We had likewiſe from them Plantanes, a fruit ſuppoſed by ſome, to be that which *Eve* was tempted with al; if a man gathers them green, yet will they ripen afterwards, coloured with a dainty yellow: the rinde or skin will peel off with much facility; they melt in the mouth, giving a moſt delicious taſte and reliſh. Theſe *Malabars* are coal-black, well limb'd, their hair long and curled; about their heads they only tye a ſmall piece of linnen, but about their bodies nothing but a little cloth which covers their ſecrets. Notwithſtanding their cruelty & inhumanity, we man'd out our long-boat, and 15, whereof I was one, went athore, carrying ſome Muskets and Swords with us, ſuſpecting the worſt: Landing, they fled from us, but not without ſending good ſtore of poyſoned arrows & darts amongſt us. It is no wonder that theſe people are ſo black, for they live under the ſcorching fire of the torrid Zone. We returned to our Ship, finding it no way ſafe to ſtay here longer; next morning hoiſing ſail, we came to *Canavar*, where we met with people more civil, whereupon we landed; and receiving things from the inhabitants of conſiderable value, for toys and trifles we gave them in lieu, we reſolved to ſtay here a while. The better ſort of theſe people are call'd *Nairo's*, whoſe heads are cover'd with a low tulipant, & their middles with a party-coloured Plad, reſembling a Scotch Plad: The poorer ſort have nothing

thing but a small vail over their privities, wholly naked elsewhere; which vail or flap the women in courtesie will turn aside, and shew a man their *Pudenda*, by way of gratitude for any courtesie received, as if they would render satisfaction with that, which could never receive plenary satisfaction it self. They have a strange custom in their Marriages, observed among them by the highest to the lowest: who so marrieth, is not to have the first nights imbraces with his Bride, but is very well contented to bestow her Maiden-head on the *Bramini*, or Priest, who do not alwayes enjoy it, being glutted with such frequent offerings, and therefore will many times sell them to strangers. Such a proffer I had once made me, and with shame I must confess, I did accept it, forgetting those sacred vows I made in *Newgate*, to live a more pious, strict and sober life. The Bride that night, was plac'd in one of their Fanes, as its customary, the Priest or *Bramin* coming to her; but instead thereof, according to agreement between this Priestly Paynim and my self, I went: I wondred to find her so low of stature, but I did not much matter it then, minding something else; which having performed, I departed. The next morning I had a great desire to see her, but was amazed to see her so young, believing it impossible (though I knew the contrary) a child (for I may so call her, being but seven years of age) could be capable of mans reception at that tender age. Afterwards, I was informed, it was usual for them to marry so soon; first, being extreamly salacious and leacherous, and as fit, nay, as prone to enjoy man at that age, as *Europeans* at fourteen. Next, they extreamly honour Wedlock, insomuch,

that

that if any of their children die whilſt very young, they will hire ſome Maiden to be married to him, and ſo lie with him the night after his deceaſe. So ſoon as we arrived (which is a cuſtom they uſe to all ſtrangers, of what Country ſoever) we had preſented us choice of many Virgins; our Boat-ſwain chuſing one he fancied for a ſmall price, ſhe guided him to a lodging, where if he would have ſtayed ſo long, ſhe would have performed his domeſtick affairs, as well at board as bed, diſcharging her duty very punctually: but he that undertakes any ſuch thing, muſt be very wary that he be not venereally familiar with any other woman, leſt that ſhe with whom he hath contracted himſelf for ſuch a time, doth recompence his inconſtancy with mortal poyſon. At his departure, her wages muſt be paid to her Parents, who returns then with much joy, and they receive her with as much credit and oſtentation. The chiefeſt among them hold it a very great courteſie, if any one will ſave them the labour, pain and trouble, by accepting the Hymeneal rites of his Bride. I ſhould have told the Reader, that the *Bramins* are ſo much reſpected and eſteemed by the commonalty, that if any of them gets their wives or daughters with child, they believe that off-ſpring to be much holier than their own, being extracted from Pagan piety. Their Funerals they celebrate after this manner: Bringing the dead corpſe near to their Fanes or Churches, they conſume it to aſhes, by fire made of ſweet ſmelling wood, unto which they add coſtly perfumes in Aromatick gums and ſpices: If the wife only (for here they will not hear of Polygamy) caſt not her ſelf into the flames voluntarily, they look upon her to be ſome common proſtitute, having not any

thing

thing commendable in her natural diſpoſition; but if ſhe freely commits her ſelf to the flames, with her husbands carcaſe, ſhe from that noble act (for ſo it is eſteemed of among theſe infidels) derives to her memory, reputation and glory amongſt her ſurviving friends and kindred. They are deluded on to this reſolution by their *Bramins*, who perſwade them by ſo doing, they ſhall enjoy variety of perpetual pleaſures, in a place that is never diſturbed by alteration of weather, wherein night is baniſht, there being a continual ſpring; neither is there wanting any thing that ſhall raviſh each individual ſenſe. This was at firſt a ſtratagem invented by ſome long-headed Politician, to divert them from murdering their husbands (which they were frequently guilty of, by reaſon of their extream leachery and inſatiate venery) ſo by that means they were reduc'd to that good order, as that they tendered the preſervation of their husbands healths and lives equally with their own. * For my part, I could wiſh the like cuſtom enjoyn'd on all married Engliſh females (for the love I bear to my own Country) which I am confident would prevent the deſtruction of thouſands of well-meaning Chriſtians, which receive a full ſtop in the full career of their lives, either by corrupting their bodies by venemous medicaments adminiſtred by ſome preteded Doctors hand (it may be her Stallion) unto which he is eaſily perſwaded, by the good opinion he hath of his wifes great care and affection for him: or elſe his body is poyſoned by ſucking or drawing in the contagious fumes which proceed from her contaminated body, occaſion'd by uſing pluralities for her venereal ſatisfaction, & ſo dies of the new Conſumption.

Or Laſtly, by pettiſh and petulant behaviour, ſhe wearieth him of his life, and at laſt is willing to die, that he may be freed, not only from the clamorous noiſe of her tongue, but that the deriſion of his neighbours, and ſcandal that ſhe hath brought upon him, may not reach his ears. That all ſuch might be mindful of their duty, I would have (were it at my diſpoſing) theſe two lines fixt as a *Motto* to their doors.

A Conchant Cuckold, and a rampant Wife,
A Cop'latives disjunctive all their life.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXX.

From Delyn *he sailed to* Zeyloon; *with what he there observed.*

THe Isle of *Zeyloon* is very famous, and not far distant from the Point of *India*, called *Cape Comorein*; it abounds with all sorts of odoriferous and Aromatical Spices; the people are Pagans, not owning a Deity: some though have heard of Christ, and others of *Mahomet*, but such are rarely to be found. They go naked, not compelled thereunto by want or poverty, but meer heat of the Sun. They are great Idolaters, worshipping things in monstrous shapes. On the top of a high Mountain, they have set conspicuously the Idæa of an horrible *Cacodæmon*, unto which Pilgrims from remote parts do resort; and upon this account, a King of *Zeyloon* coming, once derided this Idol: another time, intending to make a second repetition of his former derision, the King was even frighted out of his wits; for not onely he, but his attendants all saw how this *Dæmon* threatned him for so doing, by shaking a flaming Cymeter, and rowling his fiery eyes, from his mouth gaping, issued out fiery flames; whereat this King returns with as much penitence as amazement, resolving by his due respect and worship for the time to come, to make an atonement for his former errors. For my part, had I not believed there was a Devil, the sight of this horrid monstrous representation would have induc'd me into the belief that this was one really. They have in another place a Chappel, in which they adore the Devil

Devil (whom they call *Deumo*) the height whereof is about three yards, and uncovered: the wooden entrance is engraven with helliſh ſhapes; within, their beloved Devil or *Deumo*, is enthronized on a brazen Mount: From his head iſſue four great horns, his eyes of an indifferent proportionable bigneſs, having ſomewhat a larger circumference than two ſawcers; his noſe flat; a mouth like a porteullice, beautified with fours tusks, like Elephants teeth; his hands like claws, and his feet not unlike a Monkeys: beſide him ſtand leſſer *Deumo*'s attending on this grand *Pagod*, ſome whereof are repreſented or pictured devouring ſouls. Every morning the Prieſt waſheth them, not departing till he hath craved their malediction; and when he takes his leave, he is very careful of offending the Devil by ſhewing his poſteriors, and therefore goes from him retragrade, ſtedfaſtly fixing his eyes on the Idol. 'Tis ſtrange that a rational ſoul ſhould be ſo much infatuated, as to adore ſuch a monſtrous and ridiculous thing. The people in way of mutual love and amity, uſe to exchange their wives; a thing, though much hated by the jealous *Spaniard*, yet would be very acceptable to other *Europæans*, or elſe to be rid of them altogether, who are the daily murderers of their content and quiet. Polygamy, or plurality of Wives, is here permitted; and as the men are granted the liberty to have more than one wife, ſo are the women allowed more than one husband. However, the woman hath the diſpoſal left her of her children, giving them to him ſhe hath the greateſt affection for; which he receives, not queſtioning his intereſt or right (by generation) unto the infant.

Elſe-

Elsewhere the Fates decreed a Cuckol'ds lot,
To keep that child another man begot;
And by his joy therein he plainly shows,
He thanks the man that pay'd those debts he owes:
But these She-Blacks *in justice thought it fit,*
That he which got the child, likewise keep it:
Therefore both love and custom made it so,
On the true Father they the child bestow:
By which good Law unto each man 'tis known,
That he doth keep no other child but's own.
Were this observ'd in England, *I durst swear,*
Some what-d'ye-lacks *would Heirs to Lords appear;*
And half of what some own, must be conferr'd
On such who have a Fathers name deserv'd.
These Blacks *do tax our women, for they paint*
The Devil white, and make him seem a Saint;
To let them know, they are far greater evils;
For fairest females oft are foulest Devils.

We stayed not long here, but having dispatcht what we came for, we sailed along the coast of *Choromandel*, and landed at *Meliapor*. The people are much after the same complexion of those of *Delyn*, only a little more duskie, and go in a manner naked too. Here are likewise great store of *Bramins*, who are very busie and industrious to instruct these poor ignorant souls in the perfect way to damnation; for which they have the honour and estimation of all conferred upon them. We man'd out our long-boat and went ashore; upon our landing, it was our hap to be eye-witnesses of one of their Funerals, which was performed after this manner. The husband was carried

ried before the combustible Pile; his most dearly loving wife closely following after him, attended by her Parents and children; musick (such as they have, which I cannot compare to that of the Spheres) playing before, behind, and on each side of her. She was dresst both neatly & sumptuously, to the height of the rudeness of their art; her head, neck, and arms (not omiting her nose, legs, and toes) each bedeckt and charged with Bracelets of silver, with jewels every where about her distributed: She carried flowers in her hands, which she disposed of to those she met. The Priest going backwards before her, shewed her a magical glass, which represented to her sight whatever might be pleasing to her sensual appetite. The *Bramin* all along inculcating to her thoughts, the sense-ravishing and affable joys she shall possess after her decease; at which this poor deluded soul smiled, and seemed to be much transported. We followed them till they came to the fire, which was made of sweet odoriferous wood. As soon as her dead husband was committed to the flames, she voluntarily leapt in after him, incorporating her self with the fire, and his ashes: we wondred that the standers-by would permit her thus to destroy her self, imagining this rash action proceeded from the ardency of her affection; but perceiving her friends to throw in after her, jewels and many precious things, with much exultation and expressions of joy, we concluded this to be the effects of custom. Such as refuse to burn in this manner, are immediately shaven, and are hourly in danger to be murdered by their own issue or kindred, looking upon them as strumpets: and indeed many of them are so audaciously impudent, that upon the least di-

ſtaſte, or not having their luxurious expectations anſwered, nothing more intended or indeavouredthan the lives of their husbands. They are in theſe parts ſo extreamly idolatrous, and ſo over-ſwayed by the Devil, that they adore a great Idol made of Copper gilded, whoſe ſtatue is carried up and down, mounted on a glorious Charriot, with eight very large wheels overlayed with gold; the aſcent or ſteps to the charriot are very large & capacious, on which ſit the Prieſts, attended by little young girles, who for devotion ſake, proſtitute themſelves freely to the heat of any libidinous ſpectator; for ſo doing, they are intitled the *Pagodes* children: A very ſtrange zeal in their bewitched or beſotted Parents, to deſtinate the off-ſpring of their bodies, from their non-age, to ſuch an abominable liberty; for by letting them know the uſe of Man ſo ſoon, it cannot but be very prejudicial to their bodies, but alſo inveſt them with the thoughts of perpetual whoring: For, that woman that ſhall admit of more than one to her private imbraces, will admit of any upon the like account. Nay, ſuch is their blind zeal and ſuperſtition, that as the Chariot paſſeth, ſome will voluntarily throw themſelves under the wheels, who are cruſht in pieces by the weight of the Idol and its attendants, ſuffering death without the benefit of a happy (but to them unhappy) Martyrdom.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXI.

From Zeyloon, *he arrived at* Syam; *and what there he saw and observed.*

SYam is a Kingdom contiguous to *Pegu*, a part of the *East-Indies*: And, as the people are included within the burning Zone, therefore far from being fair; yet are tall of stature, very strong and valiant, and generally so strait, that few are found among them crooked. Formerly they were much given to *Sodomy*: to prevent which, 'twas wisely ordered, (though strangely) that the males as soon as born, should have a bell of gold (and in it a dry'd Adders tongue) put through the prepuce and flesh. When then desire of copulation stimulates any of them, he presents himself to some expert Midwives; who advise him to drink *Opium*, or some such somniferous potion; which having done in their presence, he falls asleep; during which interval, they remove the ball, and apply to the orifice from whence it was taken, an unguent, which affords a speedy cure: then is he free to make use of such as his fancy leads him to. The young Girles are served in a worse manner; and it is as great a rarity, to finde a pure Virgin here at ten years old, as to finde a Maid at sixteen, in most places of *France*, or its neighbouring Countreys. And that these young Fry may be capable of that employment they are destinated unto, they have potions given them to drink. The women here (still the more to allure the men from that detestable and un-

natural act of *Sodomy*) go naked; (as little a novelty in theſe parts, as for *Iriſh* and *Scotch* to waſh their cloaths with their feet, their coats, ſmock and all tuckt up about their middles, though twenty men ſtand by as (deriding ſpectators) I ſay, they go naked to their middles, where the better ſort are covered with a fine tranſparent Taffata or dainty Lawn, which by a cunning device is ſo made to open, that as they paſs along, the leaſt air diſcovers all, to all mens immodeſt views. Their Prieſts, which they call *Tallapoi*, are ſeeming very zealouſly ſuperſtitious: they ſomewhat incline to Mahometaniſm; for they pretend they will not drink wine, being forbidden it by their Law, yet are abominable hypocrites: for, though they wear a ſheep-skin with the wool thereon, not ſuffering any hair to be on their bodies, and in ſhew lead a chaſte life, yet I found the contrary; as you ſhall underſtand by what paſt between one of them and my ſelf. I being on ſhore with our Ships crew, I chanc'd to walk abroad, carrying with me a bottle of *Spaniſh*-wine: As I entred into a Wood, intending not to adventure too far, there came to me one of theſe *Tallapoi* or Prieſts, in the habit aforeſaid, with a horn about his neck, reſembling a Sow-gelder's but much leſs; with which, I was told, they, with the ſound thereof, uſed to convene the people to hear them preach. This holy Infidel eſpying me, bleſt himſelf, (as I gueſt by his geſture) & approaching near me, I imagined that he prayed for me, by the elevation of his and eyes hands: as a requital, I proffered him ſome of my wine; and having taſted thereof, lik'd it ſo well, that by ſigns, I underſtood he deſired his horn full of me: to tell you the truth,

I

I lik'd it so well my self, that I had no desire to part with one drop more of it; but his importunities so far prevailed, that I granted his request; which having obtained, he made no more ado but drank it off, making but one gulp thereof; a thing contrary to the strictness of his profession. After this, he seemed to bless me, and so departed. It was but a little while, before he again presented himself to my view; and beckoning to me, I followed him: coming close up to him, he pointed with his finger to a place, where covertly I espy'd three Maidens (as I supposed) to whom he by signs perswaded me to go. Sitting down amongst them, they entertained me with as much civility as they were endued withall, and courted me after their amorous fashion. One of these was the handsomest that I have seen in those parts; though not to be compared, for form of face, with the homeliest Kitchin-stuff-wench in *London*. I dallied with her so long, till that lust conquer'd my fancy; attempting something, and being in a fair way to it, this *Satyr-Goat-Devil*, (I can't invent a name bad enough to call him by) presently falls down upon us; and taking me thus unawares, lying on my belly, I was not able to help my self, that he had like to have performed his business; and questionless had effected it, but that the two Maidens standing by (no ways ashamed at this most shameful sight) assisted me, pulling him off. I presently started up, and seized him; and tripping up his heels, I laid him on his back: having so done, I bound him; then taking out my knife, I could not find in my heart to spare him one inch; and that he might not have any witnesses left of what was done, I took away his testicles too. The three

young Girles fled, fearing my rage and revenge might have extended to them: And fearing my ſelf, that they would give information of what I had done, I fled too to my Ships-Comerades; and giving them account of what had happened, we all judg'd it the ſafeſt way to go aboard; and ſo we did, with all expedition poſſible.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXII.

From hence he ſails to Do-Cerne, *ſo called by the* Portugals; *who* Adam-*like, give* (*or, as I may ſay, take too much liberty*) *in impoſing names on all new places, and things. By the* Hollanders, *it is called* Mauritius. *Its general Deſcription.*

DO-*Cerne* or *Mauritius*, is an Iſle ſituate within the torrid Zone, cloſe by the Tropick of *Capricorn*; but it is very uncertain unto what part of the world it belongs, participating both of *America*, and bending towards the *Aſiatick* Seas, from *India* to *Java*. This Iſle aboundeth with what the uſe of man ſhall require. The landing looking out at Sea, is Mountainous: the circuit of this Iſland is about an hundred miles; it procreates an healthy and nouriſhing air; the great quantity of ever-flouriſhing & fragrant trees, doth no leſs lenifie the burning heat, when the Sun enters into *Capricorn*, as helped by the ſweet mollifying breath of the North-weſt winde, when *Sol* again adheres to *Cancer*. Now as the temperature of that body is beſt compoſed, that participates indifferently of all the Elements, which either ſuper-abounding or wanting, begets defect; What then is the temperature of this place, which is bleſt with, & abounds in all, & abortive in none? Water is here very plentiful, drilling it ſelf from the high rocks & trickling down into the valleys, ſpreads it ſelf into various Meanders, till thoſe ſweet and pleaſant

waters diſembogue themſelves into the lap of the ſalt Ocean. There is ſo great a quantity of wood, that we could hardly procure paſſage. But of thoſe many various Trees, we found none ſo beneficial to us, as the *Palmeto*: this Tree is long, ſtreight, and very ſoft, having neither leaves, boughs, nor branches, ſave at the top, whereon there is a ſoft pith, wherein conſiſts the ſole vegetative of that Tree; which cut out, the *Palmeto* in a very ſhort time expires. Its taſte is much like a kernel of an Hazel-nut; boiled, it is like Cabbage. But the chiefeſt commodity that this Tree produceth, is the wine which iſſueth from it, pleaſant, and as nouriſhing as Muskadine or Alligant. Thus we procured ſome thereof; coming where two or three grew together, with an augure we bored ſome ſmall holes in each, which immediately the liquor filled; then with a ſmall cane or quill we ſuckt the wine out of one Tree; then we went to another, and from that to the third: by that time we had drained the laſt, the holes in the two former were full again. This courſe we followed ſo ſmartly, that in leſs than an hour, three of us were ſo drunk (whereof I was none of the ſobereſt) that had not theſe Trees been near the ſhore, for ought I know, by the morning we might have feaſted the wilde beaſts. Divers other Trees there be, ſtrong both in ſhape and nature; one whereof (meerly out of curioſity) I muſt needs taſte, which for half an hour ſo bit or ſtung my tongue, as if I had had my mouth full of Vitriol, or ſpirit of Salt. It is a comely tree to look on, but brings forth not any thing that is good: this Tree is in a manner naked too, and the body thereof as ſoft and penetrable, as new Cheeſe: the form of the Tree,

its

its uſeleſneſs, with that hidden ſting it carries in it, together with its ſoftneſs; the luſt of which, invites me to cut theſe lines therein; which my knife as eaſily performed, as to write a mans name with a ſtick on the ſand. The liues were theſe:

Th'art like a Woman, but thou want'ſt her breath;
Who's fair, but fruitleſs, and will ſting to death
If taſted: would I could blaſt thee with my curſe,
Since woman thou art like, for nothing's worſe.

There is another Tree, which beareth a cod full of ſharp prickles, wherein lies hid a round fruit, in form of a Doves-egg; crack it, and therein contain'd you ſhall finde a kernel, pleaſant in taſte, but poyſonous in its operation. My ſweet tooth lon'gd for a taſte, and being very toothſome I did eat ſeveral; but it was not long ere my guts were all in an uproar, and were reſolved in this mutiny, could they have found way, to charge my mouth with high treaſon, againſt the reſt of my Members; but they were at laſt content only to diſcharge their fury through the Poſtern of their Microcoſm; which they did ſo furiouſly, that I was much afraid, my guts having ſpent all their ſhot, they would have marcht out after. I had (in plain Engliſh) in leſs than ſix hours ſixty ſtools, beſides purging upwards; and had not we had a very skilful Dr. Chyrurgeon of our Ship, I had unavoidably periſht. Nature in this Iſland ſhew'd her prodigality of water and wood, correſponding alſo in every thing elſe a fruitful Mother labours to be excellent in. Here ſhe ſeems to boaſt, not only in the variety of feather'd creatures, but in the rareneſs of that variety, which

ſhould

ſhould I run over but briefly, the ſubject is ſo large, that by ſome I cannot but be thought too tedious. However, I ſhall lightly touch thereon. Here, and here only is generated the *Dodo*; for rareneſs of ſhape contending with the *Arabian Phœnix*; her body is round and very fat, the leaſt whereof, commonly weighs above twenty pound: They pleaſe the ſight more than the appetite, for their fleſh is of no nouriſhment, and very offenfive to the ſtomach. By her viſage (darting forth melancholy) ſhe ſeems to be ſenſible of that injury Nature hath done her, in framing ſo great a body, and yet uſeleſs, but to pleaſe the eye; committing its guidance to complemental wings (for ſo I'm forc'd to call them) ſince they are ſo ſmall and impotent, that they only ſerve to prove her an off-ſpring of the winged Tribe. Here are Bats alſo, as large as Gaſhawks. There is likewiſe great plenty of Fiſh: among the reſt of moſt eſpecial note, is the Cow-fiſh; the head thereof not unlike an Elephants, her eyes are ſmall, her body at full growth about three yards long, and one broad, her fins exceeding little, her fleſh (being an amphibious creature, living as well at Land, ſometimes, as in the Sea) doth taſte much like Veal. Some ſay that this Fiſh doth affect, and takes much delight in the ſight of a mans viſage. About this Iſland are flying fiſh, Dolphins, and Sharks. One of our men imprudently ſwimming one day, the weather being very hot, in our ſight a Shark came and bit off his leg, and part of his thigh, and he thereupon ſunk; we made out to ſave him, but before we came, he was drowned. Here are Tortoiſes ſo great, that they will creep

with

with two mens burdens on their backs; but their pace is so slow, that they would make but ill Porters, going not above ten yards in two hours, when they make their greatest speed. The birds here are so unaccustomed to frights, that I have shot five or six times amongst a flock, letting the dead still lie, and not one of the surviving did so much as offer to flie. The Goats here have more of the Politician in them, for they seldom feed or rest themselves, but they set out their sentinels.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXIII.

Hence he ſailed for Bantam; *by the way he recounts the danger he had like to have ſuſtained, by aſcending a* burning Mountain.

WEighing Anchor, we ſteer'd our courſe for *Bantam*; but being much ſtraitned by the way, for want of freſh water, we were compell'd to make up to the firſt Land we deſcry'd. Though the darkneſs of the night blinded our eyes from ſuch diſcoveries, yet flames of fire not far diſtant from us, gave us perfect intelligence that land was not far off. That night we caſt Anchor, fearing we might run foul of ſome Rock or ſhelf: In the morning we ſaw a large track of Land before us, not knowing what place it ſhould be. Our Captain commanded the Long-boat to be man'd out, to procure water, if any good were there: amongſt the reſt, I went for one; for I was very greedy to obſerve novelties. Coming on ſhore, and ſeeing this Hill now and than belch out flames, by my perſwaſions I made my fellows forget for a time their duty or errand they came about, to make ſome inquiſition into this *miracle* of Nature. Whereupon we all reſolved unanimouſly to aſcend the Hill, and with much difficulty we came ſo nigh the top, that we heard a moſt hideous noiſe proceeding from the Concave thereof: ſo terrible it was, that we now began to condemn our raſh attempt, and ſtood at a convenient diſtance, judging it the only *medium* of our ſafety. Whilſt we were thus in a *delirium*, not knowing

knowing what was the best to be done; the Mountain was instantly possest with an *Ague-fit*, & afterwards vomiting up smoak & stones into the Air (which afterwards fell down in a shower upon our heads) we thought we could not escape without a miracle: and whilst we were all striving which way, with greatest expedition, we might eschew the danger, there rose in the midst of us such an heap of earth, ashes, and fire, with such kinde of combustible matter, as that we all seem'd as so many *moveable burning Beacons*, & without any thoughts of helping each other, every one endeavoured to secure himself. And although I was the last in the company, yet in this expedition it was much available to me; for my companions making more haste than good speed, tumbling down the Hill before me, fell several of them together; which *blocks* lying in my way, obstructed my passage, & so sav'd the breaking of my neck, which otherwise would have been inevitable. In this prodigious conflict, most of us lost the hair of our heads, not without receiving several *batteries* upon the *Out-works* of our bodies. At first sight we were much afraid; but the consequence made it appear, we were not more afraid than hurt. We made a shift to crawl down the rest of the way; and having fixt our unadvised feet on the bottom of the Mountain, we resolv'd we would never again pay so dearly for our curiosity, but forthwith went in search of some Spring, that might serve as well to quench our cloaths, as our thirst. What we sought for we quickly found; and so filling our empty Cask, we made what haste we could aboard. The Captain and the rest stood amaz'd to see us look so ghastly, and were very impatient to know

know what was the matter with us; we told them succinctly what had happened, and what great dangers we underwent: instead of pitying us, they only laught at us for being such adventurous fools. Having thus furnished our selves with what we wanted, we set sail again for *Bantum*; where we safely arriv'd in a short time.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXIV.

Going ashore to Bantam, *and observing the Merchants what they did, taking up Goods upon credit (as it is usual in those parts) till the ship is ready to set sail, he by a stratagem turns Merchant too, and cheats a* Banyan, *or* China-*Merchant.*

AS soon as we came into the Harbour before *Bantam*, we presently man'd out our Long-boat and went ashore, to acquaint the *President* what we were, and by what authority we came thither to Traffick, being impowered by the *East-India*-Company. We were received with much demonstrations of joy, and nobly feasted for three dayes together. Here note, that the house wherein the *President* dwelleth, is the receptacle for the whole Factory, each man according to his quality having a dwelling within this house suitable to his dignity; the Factors all in general taking their daily repast with the *President*. In a weeks time I learned by observation the custom of the Country, and manner or way of Trading, our Merchant taking up Goods daily, and sending them aboard without giving present satisfaction; it being sufficient that he belonged to such a Ship, and therefore must pay before he go, otherwise the King will arrest the Ship, compelling him to make restitution or payment. One time I met with a *Banyan*, whom I observ'd to have a box full of precious stones: I could not sleep for thinking how I should make

make my self a Partner with him. At last I hammer'd out this invention: I cloath'd my self in *Indian*-silk, according to the custom of the Country; and having so done, I discoloured my face, & clapt a black patch upon one of my eyes. In this equipage I addrest my self to this *Baunyan*, who presently laid open his treasure to my view. I was not long in chusing what I esteem'd as most valuable; and demanding of him the price, we agreed he should have either so many pieces of English gold within two dayes, or else take his choice of what commodities I had aboard. We made a shift to understand each others broken expressions; and he without the least suspicion of my treachery, delivered his stones into my hands. Taking off my disguise, I went instantly aboard, and hid what I had cheated the *Baunyan* of (as I might easily do for the smallness of its bulk) in the Hold of our Ship, resolving not to go ashore yet awhile. The day of payment being come, and the *Baunyan* no where finding me on Land, came aboard of our Ship, where by sign he made known to our Captain his errand; that a Merchant belonging to his Ship had bought commodities of him, & promised to pay him on that day. Our Captain reply'd, that he verily believed he was mistaken (as knowing what commodities the Merchants belonging properly to the Ship had bought) and therefore told him he must make inquiry elsewhere for satisfaction. The *Baunyan* still persisted, alleadging he was not mistaken, and that he was confident if he might have a sight of all the men, he could out of them select the concern'd person. So wary I was of being discovered, that I acquainted not one soul with my project: for had I committed this secret to any,

(though

(though ever so dear a friend) it had been mine no longer; neither could I have promised to my self safety. Hereupon the Captain ordered us to be all call'd aloft: which was spedily performed. He went all round the company, viewing every man particularly, and very heedfully. At last he came to me, and there made a stand, (which had like to have made my heart start out of my breast:) he lookt upon me on this side, and on the other side; and to say truly, on every side: and having thorowly eyed me, he ran to our Captain, saying, That should be the man (pointing to me) but that he is a *white man*, and hath *two sees (id est)* two eyes. Whereupon I was strictly examined: but for all this sifting, I would not let drop any thing of a confession, that should convict me of guilt; but with lifting up hands and eyes to Heaven, I utterly denyed that ere I saw this man, or ever had any dealing with him. I had now forgot what promises and vows I made to Heaven, (when in *Newgate*, and sentenced to be hang'd at *Tyburn*) what a serious, pious, and honest life I would lead, if I escaped that eminent danger the concerns of this life and that to come were then in. Herein I see the old Proverb verified:

Quo semel est imbuta recens servabit odorem
Testa diu, &c.------

That Cask will savour of that liquor still,
With which at first the Cask a man did fill.

Or according to that thred-bare expression so commonly used:

Naturam expellas fura, licet uſque recurret.

Though man ſhould ſtop his nature from its courſe,
It will o'reflow again with greater force.

In ſhort, the *Bannyan*, ſince he could not ſay poſitively I was the man, was diſmiſt, not without a ſolemn vow he would be revenged of us all in general; and I clear'd of the Indictment.

CHAP.

CHAP. LXXV.

The next going aſhore of the Sea-men, this Bannyan *(for the injury was done him) cauſed a* Running a Muck, *that is, he inſtigated a great many people to kill all they met of that ſhip. The loſs of ſeveral men thereupon: but he is out of danger, having cunningly kept himſelf aboard that time. He afterwards had like to have been killed by a* Creaſe *the* Bannyan *had hired for that purpoſe. His enemies being deſtroyed, he marrieth an* Indian Punce-woman.

THe next day, a great many of our men went aſhore; and going into *China-row*, (a ſtreet ſo called in *Bantam*) to drink Punce and Tea, a great crew of Indians and Chineſes (headed by this *Bannyam*) fell upon them, killing whom they could, not directing their revenge upon any particular perſon, which they call a *Muck*:) ſo hot and ſharp was this Conflict, that many were killed on both ſides, but more wounded. This accident alarm'd the whole town, but moſt eſpecially the Engliſh there reſident: but at laſt, with much ado, this grand uproar was calmed. It was my good fortune, that I was not then among them, otherwiſe I might have been made a ſacrifice among the reſt of my fellows. But I was fore-warn'd, having been pre-inform'd that ſuch broyls are uſual upon ſuch occaſions; wherefore I kept my ſelf out of harms way for that time.

But not long after, thinking their malice was blown over, I went aſhore; and walking with others of our Boats-crew in the ſame *Row*, (where moſt of our men were us'd to reſort, becauſe of the liquor that

was there to be had, and a Whore to boot) a fel'ow came to me, with this *Bannyan* I cheated, and both of them with *Creaſes*, (a kind of Dagger of about a foot and half long) would have ſtab'd me, had not my friends prevented them, by ſtriking up their heels; and afterwards with their own *Creaſes* ſtab'd them to the heart. After this, we could walk very quietly without any diſturbance, going any where without any danger.

Being very hot there, our uſual paſtime was to go up a little ſmall River (joyning to the Town) four or five miles to waſh our ſelves: the trees ſo covered it over like an Arbor, that the beams of the Sun could not penetrate it; by which means it was fine and cool, which very much refreſht our parched bodies. I never came aſhore, but I drank very immoderately of *Punce*, *Rack*, *Tea*, &c. which was brought up in great China-Jug holding at leaſt two Quarts: with every ſuch Jug there was brought in a Diſh of Sweetmeats, not of one ſort, but variety, and excellent good; for which we paid a ſhilling Engliſh: and if you call'd for another Jug, you paid no more, unleſs a Diſh uſher'd it in.

One houſe eſpecially I much frequented, for the Indian womans ſake that kept it: for though ſhe was black, or rather tawny, yet ſhe was well-featur'd and well-form'd, having long black hair (when ſhe unty'd the treſſes) hanging down to her legs. She from the firſt ſhewed me as much kindneſs as could be expected from that lump of Barbariſm: and I could diſcerne her inclinations, (in the ſame manner as a man may from beaſts, when they are prone to Generation) but yet it went againſt my ſtomack to yield to her motions. However, ſhe continued her love to me, not letting me pay for any thing I call'd for: and

when

when there was no neceſſity of being aboard, ſhe would in a maner make me lie in her houſe, (which, as their houſes commonly are, had but one ſtory:) the beds they uſe are a kinde of Quilt, hard; for were they ſoft, the horneſs of the Climate would cauſe them to be very deſtructive to mans body, even melting his very reins. Gold and Jewels ſhe had great quantity, with an houſe richly furniſhed after the Indian faſhion. For this conſideration, I perſwaded my ſelf to marry her; and with ſeveral arguments alleaged, I gained ſo much conqueſt over my ſelf, that I could kiſs her witout diſgorging my ſelf: and by accuſtoming my ſelf to her company, methought I began to take ſome delight in it. By degrees, intereſt ſo over-power'd me, that I reſolv'd to marry her. Thus many (nay moſt) for Money, ſtick not to give themſelves to the Devil. Having one night (lying there) ſeriouſly conſidered of my reſolution, and liking it indifferent well, I fell aſleep; but wonder'd when I awaked, to ſee a thing lie by me *all black*, as if ſhe had had a *Mourning-ſmock* on. It ſeems ſhe could hold out no longer: I pretended to flee from her; but ſhe held me faſt in her arms, uſing what rhetorick ſhe could to perſwade me to the contrary. I ask'd her what ſhe meant? She told me in a little broken Engliſh ſhe had got, that ſhe would *Money me*; marry me, ſhe meant: I, Money me, ſaid I, that I like well; but without it, let the Devil have married her for me. I ask'd her ſeveral queſtions, to which ſhe gave me ſatisfaction; and enjoyn'd her ſeveral things, which ſhe greedily condeſcended to: whereupon I gave her the firſt-fruits of her deſires. But ere I go farther, take ſomething of my Ryming fancie with you.

CHAP. LXXVI.

He deſcants on his Marrying, and lying with an Indian Black : Gives wholſom Advice to others ; and concludes for this time.

At the firſt ſight, her head ſeem'd in a Caſe,
Or that a Vizard-mask *had hid her face,*
Or that ſhe was ſome Fiend *from hell had ſtole,*
Having for Luſt been burnt *there to a* cole.
I could not tell what this foul thing ſhould be :
A Suceubus *it did appear to me ;*
A damn'd black *ſoul, that was by heaven ſent,*
To make me of my blacker *crimes repent.*
I ſtarted from her, being much amaz'd :
The more I was afraid, the more I gaz'd.
Then ſhe aroſe, and caught me in her arm ;
Such ſoft fleſh ſure intended me no harm.
'Twas time to roar, ſince that I could not tell,
But that I was encircled (*now*) *by* Hell.
Stay, ſtay, (ſaid ſhe) I am no helliſh fiend,
I'm fleſh and blood, and am thy loving friend :
If my complexion do not pleaſe thy minde,
Then cloſe thine eyes, yet love : Thus love is blinde.
I underſtood her tongue, and ſtreight did ſwear
That I would baniſh this my cauſleſs fear ;
And ſo betook my ſelf unto the Rug
On which we lay, and after many a Tug,
I plighted faith *with this kinde* Infidel :
But what we did, my modeſt tongue won't tell.
I would at any time (might I but chuſe)
The faireſt White *for this ſame* Black *refuſe.*
But miſchief on't, let me ſhoot *e're ſo right,*
It can't be ſaid that I did hit the White.

Intereſt

Interest so blinded my reason, that I went instantly to my Captain, & gave him information of my proceedings, desiring his consent in the marrying this Indian, alleadging how advantagious it would be to me. He granted my request, upon my earnest importunity; and being dismist from his service, we were married according to the Ceremonies of the Church by an English Priest, she renouncing her Paganism. What money was got by my wifes Trade, I laid out in such Commodities the Country afforded, as Callico's, Pepper, Indico, Green-Ginger, &c. and sold them immediately to the Ships lying in the Harbour, doubling what I laid out: so that in short time I found my stock to increase beyond expectation: such satisfaction my Black received from me, that she thought she could not do enough to please me. I was an absolute Monarch in my family; she and her servants willingly condescended to be my vassals: yet though I thus enjoy'd the prerogative of an husband, yet I did not Lord it too much; which won so much upon my wifes affection, and those that were concern'd with her, that assoon as I desired any thing it was immediately performed, with much alacrity and expedition.

I fancy'd my life to be now as happy as the world could make it, having plenty of every thing, and not control'd by the foolish self-will of an obstinate woman. I confess it was at first a great regret to my spirit, to lie by a woman so contrary to my own complexion: but Custom made her become in process of time as lovely in my eye, as if she had been the compleatest European beauty. I now again considered how he must live, that intends to live well; and upon that consideration, concluded upon this resolution, Not to neglect my duty to Heaven, my Self,

or Neighbors: for he that fails in any of these, falls short in making his life commendable. For our Selves, we need Order; for our Neighbor, Charity; and for the Deity, Reverence and Humility. These three duties are so concatenated, that he which liveth orderly, cannot but be acceptable to his Maker and the World. Nothing jars the Worlds harmony more, than men that break their ranks; and nothing renders Man more contemned and hated, than he whose actions onely tend to irregularity. One turbulent spirit will even dissentiate the calmest Kingdom: so did my past unruly and disorderly life ruine my self, as well as many families. I have seen an Orthodox Minister in his Pulpit with his congregation about him; and since revolving in my minde the comlines of that well-ordered sight, I have thought within my self how mad he would appear, that should wildly dance out of his room. Such is man when he spurns at the Law he liveth under; and such was I, that could not be contain'd within due limits, living like the Drone on others labors: taking no pains, but onely making a humming noise in the world, till Justice seiz'd me for a wandring, idle, and hurtful vagabond, (an *ignavum pecus*) and so had like to thrust me out of the world, the Hive of industrious Bees.

Ill company at first milled me, and it is to be feared by my example others have been misled. For he that giveth himself leave to transgres, he must needs put others out of the way. Experience giveth us to understand, that he which first disorders himself, troubles all the company. Would every man keep his own life, what a concord in Musick would every family be! It shall be my own endeavor to do this, and my cordial advice to others to do the like.

Doubt-

Doubtleſs he that performeth his duty to Heaven, ſhall finde ſuch a peace within, that ſhall fit him for whatſoever falls. He ſhall not fear himſelf, becauſe he knoweth his courſe is order: he ſhall not fear the World, becauſe he knoweth he hath done nothing that hath anger'd it: he ſhall not be afraid of Heaven; for he knoweth he ſhall there finde the favour of a ſervant, nay more, a Son, and be protected againſt the malice of Hell.

I know I ſhall be lookt on no otherwiſe than an Hypocrite; neither will the world believe my reformation real, ſince I have lived ſo notoriouſly and looſly. Let a man do well an hundred times, it may be he ſhall for a ſhort time be remembred and applauded; whereas if he doth evilly but once, he ſhall be ever condemned, and never forgot. However, let me live well, and I care not though the world ſhould ſtout my innocence, and call me diſſembler: it is no matter if I ſuffer the worſt of cenſorious reproaches, ſo that I get to Heaven at laſt: to the attaining of which, the beſt counſel I can give my ſelf and others is, *Bene vive, ordinabiliter tibi, ſociabiliter Proximo, & humiliter Deo*: Live well, orderly to thy ſelf, ſociably to thy Neighbour, and humbly to thy Maker.

Take this as wholeſome advice, though from an ill liver, which hath been in part diſcovered in the foregoing Diſcourſe; wherein I have endeavoured, by drawing up a Liſt of my own evil actions, to frighten others from the commiſſion of the like. For as there is no company ſo ſavagely bad, but a wiſe man may from it learn ſomething to make himſelf better: ſo there is no Book ſo poorly furniſhed, out of which a man may not gather ſomething for his benefit. Herein I have not minded ſo much words, as the matter; aiming at nothing more than how I might compleat-

ly

ly limn Vice in her proper ugly ſhape: having done that, I have done what I intended, The reformation of others by my wicked example. For Vice is of ſuch a Toady complexion, ſo ill ſhap'd & deform'd, that ſhe cannot chuſe but teach the ſoul to hate; ſo loathſome when ſhe is ſeen in her own naſty dreſs, that we cannot look upon her but with deteſtation and horrour. Vice was cunning and curiouſly painted when I fell into her ſcabbed embraces; neither could I have ever known her foulneſs and rottenneſs, had I not tried whether her (ſeeming) fairneſs and ſoundneſs were real. Believe me, ſhe is no ways that ſhe appears to be; therefore be not deluded by her: but let my Life be to the Reader, as a friend fal'n into a pit, that gives warning to another to avoid the danger. So admirable hath Providence diſpoſed of the wayes of man, that even the ſight of Vice in others, is like a Warning-arrow ſhot for us to take heed. Vice uſually in her greateſt bravery, publiſheth her ſelf fooliſhly, thinking thereby to procure a Train; and then it is, that the ſecret working of Conſcience makes her turn her weapons againſt her ſelf, and ſtrongly plead for her implacable adverſary Vertue. We are frequently wrought to good by contraries; and foul acts keep Vertue from the charms of Vice. An ancient Poet writ well to this purpoſe, thus:

-------- Inſuevit Pater optimus hoc me,
Ut fugerem exemplis vitiorum quæq; notando.
Quum me hortatetur parce, frugaliter, atq;
Viverem uti contentus ea, quod mi ipſe paraſſet:
Nonne vides Albi ut male vivat filius? utq;
Barrus inops? Magnum documentum ne patriam rem
Perdere quis vellit. A turpi Meretricis amore

Quum

Quum deterreret, Sectani dissimilis sis.
---.-- Sic me
Formabat puerum dictis.-----

-----Thus my best father taught
Me to flee Vice, by nothing those were naught.
When he would charge me, Thrive, and sparing be,
Content with what he had prepar'd for me;
Seest not how ill young *Albus* lives? how low
Poor *Barrus*? Sure, a weighty *Item* how
One spent his means. And when he meant to strike
A hate to Whores, To *Sectan* be not like.
------Thus me a childe
He with his precepts fashion'd.------

There is no better way to correct faults in our selves, than by observing how uncomely they appear in others. After a fit of drunkenness, my conscience would usually accuse me, and many times, after conviction, would pass so severe a sentence of condemnation on me, that my own hands have oftentimes been like to prove my Executioners. Considering within my self what should be the cause of this trouble and self loathing, I found it proceded from no other reason than the observation of others in the like beastly condition, and how noisom it hath rendred them to all. The first thing that made me abhor a Cholerick passion, and a sawcy pride in my self, (of which I was too guilty) was the seeing how ridiculous and contemptible they rendred those that are infested with them. Besides, those that are thorowly experienc'd in navigation, do as wel know the coasts as the Ocean; as well the sands, the shallows, and the rocks, as the secured depths in the most dangerless channel: so I think those that would arrive to as much perfection as they are capable of enjoying here, must

as

as well know bad, that they may abtrude or ſhun it; as the good, that they may embrace it. And this knowledge we can neither have ſo cheap, nor ſo certain, as by ſeeing it in others: for under a Crown you may buy the whole experience of a mans Life, (as of mine) which coſt ſome thouſands; though me no more hundreds than what I borrowed of the world, having of mine own nothing originally. If we could paſs the world without meeting *Vice*, then the knowledge of Vertue onely were ſufficient: but it is impoſſible to live, and not encounter her. Vice is as a god in this world: for as ſhe ruleth almoſt incontrollably, ſo ſhe aſſumes to her ſelf ubiquity, we cannot go any where, but that ſhe preſents her ſelf to the eye, *&c.* If any be unwittingly caſt thereon, let him obſerve for his own more ſafe direction. He is happy, that makes another mans vices ſteps for him to climb to his eternal reſt by. The wiſe Phyſitians make poyſon medicinable; and even the Mud of the world, by the induſtrious (yet ingrateful) *Hollander*, is turned to an uſeful fuel.

If (Reader) then thou lightſt here on any thing that is bad, by conſidering the ſorded ſtains, either correct thoſe faults thou haſt, or ſhun thoſe thou mighteſt have. That Mariner which hath Sea-room, can make any wind almoſt ſerve to ſet him forwards in his wiſhed voyage: ſo may a wiſe man take any advantage to ſet himſelf forward to the haven of Vertue. Man, aſſoon as created, had two great ſuiters for his life and ſoul; the one Vertue, and the other Vice: Virtue came in this manner, and thus attended; Truth ran before her naked, yet courageous; after her followed Labour, Cold, Hunger, Thirſt, Care and Vigilance; theſe poorly arayed, as looking upon it unſeemly to go finer than their Miſtriſs, who as plainly

plainly and meanly clad, yet cleanly: yet her countenance shew'd such a self-perfection, that she might very well emblem whatsoever Omnipotency could make most rare. Modest she was, and so lovely, that whatsoever lookt on her face stedfastly, could not but insoul himself in her. After her followed Content, enricht with Jewels, and overspread with Perfumes, carrying with her all the treasure and massie riches of the world. Then came Joy, withall essential pleasures: next, Honour, with all the ancient Orders of Nobility, Scepters, Thrones, and Crowns Imperial. Lastly, Glory, whose brightness was such, (which she shook from her Sunny tresses) that it dazled the eyes of her beholders, so that they could never truly describe her. In the rear came Eternity casting a ring about them, which like a strong Inchantment made them ever the same. Vice strove not to be behindhand with Vertue; wherefore she sets out too, and in this form: Her pre-cursor or fore-runner was Lying, a painted housewife, of a smooth, insinuating, and deluding tongue, gaudily clad all in changeable; but under her vestments she was full of scabs and loathsome ulcers. Her words seem'd exceeding pleasant, promising to all she met whatsoever could be wisht for, in the behalf of her Mistress Vice. On this hypocritical Quean Wit waited: next him, a Conceited fellow, and one that over-swayed the Fancie of man with his pretty tricks and gambals. Sloth and Luxury followed these, so full, that they were then ready to be choaked with their own fat. After these, followed some Impostors, to personate Content, Joy and Honour, in all their wealth and Royal dignities. Close after these, Vice came her self, sumtuously apparel'd, but yet a nasty surfeited slut; her breath being so infectious that he which kiss'd her was sure to perish.

periſh. After her followed ſuddenly Guilt, Horror, Shame, Loſs, Want, Sorrow, Torment; and theſe were charmed with Eternity's Ring, as the former. And thus they wooed fond Man, who taken with the ſubtile cozenages of Vice, yielded to lie with her; whereby he had his Nature ſo empoyſoned, that his ſeed was all viciated and contraminated; and his corruption even to this day is ſtill convey'd to his undone poſterity. It is mans folly, onely to look on the fore-runners of Vertue, which are very poor, as Cold, Hunger, Thirſt, *&c.* but not to conſider her glorious attendants that follow after, as Content, Joy, Honor, and Glory. We fancy Vice for her outſide, not imagining what ſhe is when ſtript of all her Gauderies.

If you then intend to enjoy for your portion a Kingdom hereafter, adhere not to the allurements of Vice; for ſhe will ſoon perſwade you to be an unthrift, to ſell your Inheritance whileſt it is but in Reverſion. But hearken to Vertue's counſel; ſhe will teach you how to husband all things well, ſo as to become a purchaſer of no leſs than Joys eternal.

Fortunes favors oft do fade,
To thoſe that in her arms do ſleep:
Shelter your ſelves in Vertue's ſhade;
She crowneth thoſe that do her reap.
For though darkned, you may ſay,
When Friends fail, and Fortune frown,
Though Vertue is the rougheſt way,
Yet proves at night a bed of Down.

THus have I given you a ſummary account of my life, from the Non-age to the Meridian of my days. If there be any expreſſions either ſurrilous or obſcene, my onely deſign was to make Vice appear as ſhe is, foul, ugly, and deformed: and I hope, he that hath ſenſe will grow wiſer by the folly that is preſented him; as Drunkards are often cured by the beaſtlineſs of others that are ſo. The ſubject would not permit to be ſerious, neither would it have been ſuitable to our merry age, being generally of *Tully*'s minde, when he ſaid, *Lectionem ſine ulla delectatione negligo*: He hated reading where no pleaſure dwelt.

As the dry light is pureſt, ſo have I endeavored to make my ſlender Wit appear terſe and ſpruce, without the fulſomneſs of wanton language. If I have in any place tranſgreſt the bounds of modeſty by looſe expreſſions, you need not fear to be offended with their unſavoury breath, for I have perſumed it: but if it ſhould chance to ſtink, it is only to drive you from my former inclination and converſation. It is probable I may be a little guilty, being not fully cured of that malady I lately laboured under. For as the breaking out of itch and blains ſhews the body is not clear, ſo foul and unrinſed expreſſions are the parulent exhalations of a corrupted minde, ſtained with the unſeaſonedneſs of the fleſh.

If any looſe word have dropt from (the Mindes beſt Interpreter) my Pen, I would have the Reader to paſs it over regardleſs, and not like a Toad, only gather up the venom of a Garden; or like a Gold-finder, make it his buſineſs to dive in ſtench and excrements. However, very cautious I was in offending any modeſt ear, (though ſometimes it could hardly

hardly be avoided, the matter in a maner requiring it) becauſe I look upon obſcene expreſſions as the Plague on Paper; and he that comes between the ſheets, is in danger of being infected. I ſhall aſſure you, had I not more reſpected a general good, by diſplaying Vice in general, to put men out of conceit with it, I ſhould not have taken ſo much pains, to be both blam'd and laught at, but ſhould have wrapt up in ſilence my ſhame and infamy. For in truth, this Book may bear a ſimilitude with the *Amphisbena*, a Serpent headed at either end: one biteth the vicious temper of him that reads it, and the other ſtings him that wrote it. To conclude, I care not though my wickedneſs and folly be ſet up as a Monument to make my infamy eternal, ſo that the reading of my Life may be any ways inſtrumental for the reformation of licentious perſons.

FINIS.